



to front y^e Title



to front y^e Title

A
T A L E
OF A
T U B.

Written for the
Universal IMPROVEMENT
OF
MANKIND.

Diu multumque desideratum.

To which is added,
An Account of a BATTLE between
the Antient and Modern Books in
St. James's Library.

ALSO
A DISCOURSE concerning the Mechanical
Operation of the SPIRIT, in a LETTER to
a FRIEND. A Fragment.

*Basima eacabasa eanaa irraurista, diarba da caeotaba sobor ca-
melanthi. Iren. Lib. 1. C. 18.*

*Juvantque novos decerpere flores,
Insignemque meo capiti petere inde coronam,
Unde prius nulli velarunt tempora Musæ.* Lucr.

The Ninth EDITION: With the AUTHOR's Apology
and Explanatory Notes.
By W. WOTTON, B. D. and Others.

DUBLIN:
Printed for G. FAULKNER in Essex-street. MDCCLVI.

T A L E

OF A

T U B

Universal Improvement
OF
MANKIND.

An Account of a BATTLE between
the Ancient and Modern
Books in
St. Paul's Library.

A Discourse concerning the Mechanical
Origin of the British Language
AND
THE
ARTS AND MYSTERIES OF THE
MIND.

By
JOHN
WILKINS.

Printed
for
J. STANLEY, at the
Sign of the Gun, in
St. Paul's Church-yard.

1687.

DUBLIN.

Printed
for
J. STANLEY, at the
Sign of the Gun, in
St. Paul's Church-yard.

AN

APOLOGY, &c.

IF good and ill Nature equally operated upon Mankind, I might have saved myself the Trouble of this Apology; for it is manifest by the Reception the following Discourse hath met with, that those who approve it are a great Majority among the Men of Taste; yet, there have been two or three Treatises written expressly against it, besides many others that have flirited at it occasionally, without one Syllable having been ever published in its Defence, or even Quotation to its Advantage, that I can remember, except by the Polite Author of a late Discourse between a Deist and a Socinian.

THEREFORE, since the Book seemeth calculated to live at least as long as our Language and our Taste admit no great Alterations, I am content to convey some Apology along with it.

THE greatest Part of that Book was finished above Thirteen Years since, (1696) which is Eight Years before it was published. The Author was then Young, his Invention at the Height, and his Reading fresh in his Head. By the Assistance of some Thinking, and much Conversation, he had endeavoured to strip himself of as many real Prejudices as he could: I say real ones, because, under the Notion of Prejudices, he knew to what dangerous Heights some Men have proceeded. Thus prepared, he

thought the numerous and gross Corruptions in Religion and Learning might furnish Matter for a Satyr, that would be useful and diverting: He resolved to proceed in a Manner that should be altogether new, the World having been already too long nauseated with endless Repetitions upon every Subject. The Abuses in Religion he proposed to set forth in the Allegory of the Coats, and the three Brothers, which was to make up the Body of the Discourse. Those in Learning he chose to introduce by way of Digressions. He was then a young Gentleman, much in the World, and wrote to the Taste of those who were like himself; therefore, in order to allure them, he gave a Liberty to his Pen, which might not suit with maturer Years, or graver Characters, and which he could have easily corrected with a very few Blots, had he been Master of his Papers for a Year or Two before their Publication.

Nor that he would have governed his Judgment by the ill-placed Cavils of the Sour, the Envious, the Stupid, and the Tasteless, which he mentions with Disdain. He acknowledges there are several youthful Sallies, which from the Grave and the Wise may deserve a Rebuke. But he desires to be answerable no farther than he is guilty, and that his Faults may not be multiplied by the ignorant, the unnatural, and uncharitable Applications of those who have neither Candor to suppose good Meanings, nor Palate to distinguish true Ones. After which, he will forfeit his Life, if any one Opinion can be fairly deduced from that Book, which is contrary to Religion or Morality.

Why should any Clergyman of our Church be angry to see the Follies of Fanaticism and Superstition exposed, although in the most ridiculous Manner? Since that is perhaps the most probable Way to cure them, or at least to hinder them from farther spreading. Besides, although it was not intended for their Perusal, it rallieth nothing but what they
preach

AN APOLOGY.

preach against. It containeth nothing to provoke them by the least Scurrility upon their Persons or their Functions. It celebrates the Church of *England* as the most perfect of all others in Discipline and Doctrine; it advanceth no Opinion they reject, nor condemneth any they receive. If the Clergy's Resentments lay upon their Hands, in my humble Opinion, they might have found more proper Objects to employ them on: * *Nondum tibi desuit Hostis*; I mean those heavy, illiterate Scriblers, prostitute in their Reputations, vicious in their Lives, and ruined in their Fortunes; who, to the Shame of good Sense as well as Piety, are greedily read, meerly upon the Strength of bold, false, impious Assertions, mixed with unmannerly Reflections upon the Priesthood, and openly intended against all Religion; in short, full of such Principles as are kindly received, because they are levelled to remove those Terrors that Religion telleth Men will be the Consequence of immoral Lives. Nothing like which is to be met with in this Discourse, although some of them are pleased so freely to censure it. And I wish there were no other Instance of what I have too frequently observed, that many of that Reverend Body are not always very nice in distinguishing between their Enemies and their Friends.

HAD the Author's Intentions met with a more candid Interpretation from some, whom out of Respect he forbearth to name, he might have been encouraged to an Examination of Books written by some of those Authors above-described, whose Errors, Ignorance, Dulness, and Villainy, he thinketh he could have detected and exposed in such a Manner, that the Persons, who are most conceived to be infected by them, would soon lay them aside and be ashamed: But he hath now given over those Thoughts, since the *weightiest* Men in the *weightiest* Stations are pleased to think it a more dangerous

Point to laugh at those Corruptions in Religion, which they themselves must disapprove, than to endeavour pulling up those very Foundations, wherein all Christians have agreed.

He thinketh it no fair Proceeding, that any Person should offer determinately to fix a Name upon the Author of this Discourse, who hath all along concealed himself from most of his nearest Friends :

*Letter of
Enthusiasm,*

Yet several have gone a farther Step, and pronounced another Book to have been the Work of the * same Hand with this, which the Author directly affirmeth to be a thorough Mistake ; he having yet never so much as read that Discourse ; a plain Instance how little Truth there often is in general Surmises, or in Conjectures drawn from a Similitude of Style, or Way of Thinking.

HAD the Author writ a Book to expose the Abuses in Law, or in Physick, he believes the Learned Professors in either Faculty would have been so far from resenting it, as to have given him Thanks for his Pains ; especially, if he had made an honourable Reservation for the true Practice of either Science : But Religion, they tell us, ought not to be ridiculed, and they tell us Truth ; yet surely, the Corruptions in it may ; for we are taught by the tritest Maxim in the World, that Religion being the best of Things, its Corruptions are likely to be the worst.

THERE is one Thing which the judicious Reader cannot but have observed, that some of those Passages in this Discourse, which appear most liable to Objection, are what they call Parodies, where the Author personates the Style and Manner of other Writers, he hath a Mind to expose. I shall produce one Instance ; it is towards the latter End of the *Introduction*. *Dryden*, *L'Estrange*, and some others I shall not name, are here levelled at, who, having spent their Lives in Faction, and Apostasies,

and

* See *Shaftsbury's* Characteristics.

and all manner of Vice, pretended to be Sufferers for Loyalty and Religion. So *Dryden* telleth us in one of his Prefaces of his Merits and Sufferings, thanks GOD that he *possesseth his Soul in Patience*: In other Places he talketh at the same Rate, and *L'Estrange* often useth the like Style; and I believe the Reader may find more Persons to give that Passage an Application: But this is enough to direct those who may have overlooked the Author's Intention.

THERE are Three or Four other Passages, which prejudiced or ignorant Readers have drawn, by great Force, to hint at ill Meanings, as if they glanced at some Tenets in Religion; in Answer to all which, the Author solemnly protesteth he is entirely Innocent, and never had it once in his Thoughts, that any Thing he said would in the least be capable of such Interpretations, which he will engage to deduce full as fairly from the most innocent Book in the World. And it will be obvious to every Reader, that this was not any Part of his Scheme or Design, the Abuses he noteth being such as all Church of *England* Men agree in; nor was it proper for his Subject to meddle with other Points, than such as have been perpetually controverted since the Reformation.

To instance only in that Passage about the three wooden Machines mentioned in the Introduction: In the Original Manuscript, there was a Description of a Fourth, which those who had the Papers in their Power blotted out, as having something in it of Satyr, that I suppose they thought was too particular, and therefore they were forced to change it to the Number *Three*, from whence some have endeavoured to squeeze out a dangerous Meaning that was never thought on. And indeed the Conceit was half spoiled by changing the Numbers; that of *Four* being much more Capalistical, and therefore better exposing the pretended Virtue of Numbers, a Superstition there intended to be ridiculed.

ANOTHER

ANOTHER Thing to be observed is, that there generally runs an Irony through the Thread of the whole Book, which the Men of Taste will observe and distinguish, and which will render some Objections, that have been made, very weak and insignificant.

THIS Apology being chiefly intended for the Satisfaction of future Readers, it may be thought unnecessary to take any Notice of such Treatises as have been writ against this ensuing Discourse; which are already sunk into waste Paper and Oblivion, after the usual Fate of common Answerers to Books, which are allowed to have any Merit. They are indeed like Annuals that grow about a young Tree, and seem to vye with it for a Summer, but fall and die with the Leaves in Autumn, and are never heard of any more. When Dr. *Eachard* writ his Book about the Contempt of the Clergy, Numbers of those Answerers immediately started up, whose Memory if he had not kept alive by his Replies, it would now be utterly unknown that he was ever answered at all. There is an indeed an Exception, when any great Genius thinketh it worth his while to expose a foolish Piece; so we still read *Marvel's* Answer to *Parker* with Pleasure, altho' the Book it answereth be sunk long ago: So the * Earl of *Orrery's* Remarks will be read with Delight, when the Dissertation he exposeth will neither be sought nor found; but these are no Enterprises for common Hands, nor to be hoped for above once or twice in an Age. Men would be more cautious of losing their Time in such an Undertaking, if they did but consider, that to answer a Book effectually requireth more Pains, and Skill, more Wit, Learning, and Judgment than were employed in the Writing of it. And the Author assureth those Gentlemen who have given themselves that Trouble with him, that his Dis-

course

• Charles Boyle.

course is the Product of the Study, the Observation, and the Invention of several Years; that he often blotted out much more than he left; and if his Papers had not been a long Time out of his Possession, they must have still undergone more severe Corrections: And do they think such a Building is to be battered with Dirt-Pellets, however envenomed the Mouths may be that discharge them? He hath seen the Productions but of two Answerers; One of which first appeared as from an unknown Hand, but since avowed by a Person, who upon some Occasions hath discovered no ill Vein of Humour. It is a Pity *any* Occasions should put him under a Necessity of being so hasty in his Productions, which otherwise might often be entertaining. But there were other Reasons obvious enough for his Miscarriage in this; he writ against the Conviction of his Talent, and entered upon one of the wrongest Attempts in Nature, to turn into Ridicule by a Week's Labour a Work which had cost so much Time, and met with so much Success in ridiculing others: The Manner how he hath handled his *Subject*, I have now forgot, having just looked it over when it first came out, as others did, meerly for the Sake of the Title.

THE other Answer is from a Person of a graver Character, and is made up of half Invektive, and half Annotation. In the latter of which, he hath generally succeeded well enough; and the Project at that Time was not amiss, to draw in Readers to his Pamphlet, several having appeared desirous that there might be some Explication of the more difficult Passages. Neither can he be altogether blamed for offering at the Invektive Part, because it is agreed on all Hands, that the Author had given him sufficient Provocation. The great Objection is against his Manner of treating it, very unsuitable to one of his Function. It was determined by a fair Majority, that this Answerer had, in a way not to be pardoned, drawn his Pen against a certain Great Man then alive, and universally revered

for

for every good Quality that could possibly enter into the Composition of the most accomplished Person. It was observed, how he was pleased and affected to to have that noble Writer called his Adversary, and it was a Point of Satyr well directed; for I have been told, Sir *William Temple* was sufficiently mortified at the Term. All the Men of Wit and Politeness were immediately up in Arms, through Indignation, which prevailed over their Contempt by the Consequences they apprehended from such an Example, and it grew to be *Porfenna's Case*; *Idem trecenti juravimus*. In short, Things were ripe for a general Insurrection, till my † Lord *Orrery* had a little laid the Spirit, and settled the Ferment. But his Lordship being principally engaged with another † Antagonist, it was thought necessary, in order to quiet the Minds of Men, that this Opposer should receive a Reprimand; which partly occasioned that Discourse of the Battle of the Books; and the Author was farther at the Pains to insert one or two Remarks on him in the Body of the Book.

THIS Answerer hath been pleased to find Fault with above a Dozen Passages, which the Author will not be at the Trouble of defending, farther, than by assuring the Reader, that for the greater Part the Reflector is entirely mistaken, and forceth Interpretations which never once entered into the Writer's Head, nor will (he is sure) into that of any Reader of Taste and Candor; he alloweth Two or Three at most there produced to have been delivered unwarily, for which he desireth to plead the Excuse offered already, of his Youth, and Frankness of Speech, and his Papers being out of his Power at the Time they were published.

But this Answerer insisteth, and saith, what he chiefly disliketh is the *Design*; what that was I have already told, and I believe there is not a Person in
England

† Charles Boyle, Inventor of the Machine called the Orrery.

‡ Dr. Bentley.

England who can understand that Book, that ever imagined it to have been any Thing else, but to expose the Abuses and Corruptions in Learning and Religion.

BUT it would be good to know what *Design* this Reflector was serving, when he concludeth his Pamphlet with a Caution to the Readers, to beware of thinking the Author's Wit was entirely his own: Surely this must have had some Allay of Personal Animosity, at least mixed with the *Design* of serving the Publick by so useful a Discovery; and it indeed toucheth the Author in a very tender Point, who insitteth upon it, that through the whole Book he hath not borrowed one single Hint from any Writer in the World; and he thought, of all Criticisms, that would never have been one. He conceived it was never disputed to be an Original, whatever Faults it might have. However, this Answerer produceth three Instances to prove *this Author's Wit is not his own in many Places*. The first is, that the Names of *Peter*, *Martin*, and *Jack*, are borrowed from a Letter of the late Duke of *Buckingham*. Whatever Wit is contained in those three Names, the Author is content to give it up, and desireth his Readers will subtract as much as they placed upon that Account; at the same Time protesting solemnly, that he never once heard of that Letter, except in this Passage of the Answerer: So that the Names were not borrowed as he affirmeth, although they should happen to be the same, which however is odd enough, and what he hardly believes, that of *Jack* being not quite so obvious as the other two. The second Instance, to shew the *Author's Wit is not his own*, is *Peter's Banter* (as he calls it in his *Alsatia* Phrase) upon Transubstantiation, which is taken from the same Duke's Conference with an *Irish* Priest, where a Cork is turned into a Horse. This the Author confesseth to have seen, about ten Years after his Book was writ, and a Year or two after it was published. Nay, the Answerer overthrows this himself;

himself; for he allows the Tale was writ in 1697, and, I think, that Pamphlet was not printed in many Years after. It was necessary, that Corruption should have some Allegory, as well as the rest; and the Author invented the properest he could, without enquiring what other People had writ, and the commonest Reader will find, there is not the least Resemblance between the two Stories. The third Instance is in these Words: *I have been assured, that the Battle in St. James's Library is, mutatis mutandis, taken out of a French Book, intitled, Combat des livres, if I misremember not.* In which Passage there are two Clauses observable: *I have been assured;* and, *if I misremember not.* I desire first to know, whether, if that Conjecture proveth an utter Falseness, those two Clauses will be a sufficient Excuse for this worthy Critick. The Matter is a Trifle; but would he venture to pronounce at this Rate upon one of greater moment! I know nothing more contemptible in a Writer than the Character of a Plagiary, which he here fixeth at a Venture; and this, not for a Passage, but a whole Discourse, taken out from another Book, only *mutatis mutandis*. The Author is as much in the Dark about this as the Answerer, and will imitate him by an Affirmation at Random; that if there be a Word of Truth in this Reflection, he is a paultry, imitating Pedant, and the Answerer is a Person of Wit, Manners, and Truth. He taketh his Boldness, from never having seen any such Treatise in his Life, nor heard of it before; and he is sure it is impossible for two Writers of different Times and Countries to agree in their Thoughts after such a Manner, that two continued Discourses shall be the same, only *mutatis mutandis*. Neither will he insist upon the Mistake of the Title: but let the Answerer and his Friend produce any Book they please, he defies them to shew one single Particular, where the judicious Reader will affirm he hath been obliged for the smallest Hint; giving only Allowance for the accidental encountering of a single

single Thought, which he knoweth may sometimes happen; although he hath never yet found it in that Discourse, nor hath heard it objected by any body else.

So that if ever any Design was unfortunately executed, it must be that of this Answerer, who, when he would have it observed that the Author's Wit is not his own, is able to produce but Three Instances, Two of them meer Trifles, and all Three manifestly false. If this be the Way these Gentlemen deal with the World in those Criticisms, where we have not Leisure to defeat them, their Readers had need be cautious how they rely upon their Credit; and whether this Proceeding can be reconciled to Humanity or Truth, let those, who think it worth their while, determine.

It is agreed, this Answerer would have succeeded much better, if he had stuck wholly to his Business as a Commentator upon the *Tale of a Tub*, wherein it cannot be denied that he hath been of some Service to the Publick, and hath given very fair Conjectures towards clearing up some difficult Passages; but it is the frequent Error of those Men (otherwise very commendable for their Labours) to make Excursions beyond their Talent and their Office, by pretending to point out the Beauties and the Faults, which is no Part of their Trade, which they always fail in, which the World never expected from them, nor gave them any Thanks for endeavouring at. The Part of *Minellius*, or *Farnaby* would have fallen in with his Genius, and might have been serviceable to many Readers who cannot enter into the abstruse Parts of that Discourse; but *Optat ephippia bos piger*. The dull, unweildy, ill-shaped Ox would needs put on the Furniture of a Horse; not considering he was born to Labour, to plow the Ground for the Sake of superior Beings; and that he hath neither the Shape, Mettle, nor Speed of that nobler Animal he would affect to personate.

It is another Pattern of this Answerer's fair Dealing, to give us Hints that the Author is dead, and yet to lay the Suspicion upon somebody, I know not who, in the Country; to which can be only returned, that he is absolutely mistaken in all his Conjectures; and surely Conjectures are at best too light a Pretence to allow a Man to assign a Name in Publick. He condemneth a Book, and consequently the Author, of whom he is utterly ignorant; yet, at the same Time fixeth in Print, what he thinks a disadvantageous Character upon those who never deserved it. A Man who receiveth a Buffet in the dark may be allowed to be vexed; but it is an odd kind of Revenge to go to Cuffs in broad Day with the first he meets, and lay the last Night's Injury at his Door. And thus much for this *discreet, candid, pious, and ingenious* Answerer.

How the Author came to be without his Papers, is a Story not proper to be told, and of very little Use, being a private Fact, of which the Reader would believe as little or as much as he thought good. He had however a blotted Copy by him, which he intended to have writ over, with many Alterations; and this the Publishers were well aware of, having put it into the Booksellers Preface, that they *apprehended a surreptitious Copy, which was to be altered, &c.* This, although not regarded by Readers, was a real Truth, only the surreptitious Copy was rather that which was printed, and they made all Haste they could, which indeed was needless; the Author not being at all prepared; but he hath been told, the Bookseller was in much Pain, having given a good Sum of Money for the Copy.

IN the Author's Original Copy there were not so many Chasms as appear in the Book; and why some of them were left he knoweth not; had the Publication been trusted to him, he should have made several Corrections of Passages against which nothing hath been ever objected. He should likewise have altered a few of those that seem with any

Reason to be excepted against : But to deal freely, the greatest Number he should have left untouched, as never suspecting it possible any wrong Interpretations could be made of them.

THE Author observeth, at the End of the Book there is a Discourse called a *Fragment* ; which he more wondered to see in Print than all the rest. Having been a most imperfect Sketch with the Addition of a few loose Hints, which he once lent a Gentleman who had designed a Discourse of somewhat the same Subject, he never thought of it afterwards, and it was a sufficient Surprise to see it pieced up together, wholly out of the Method and Scheme he had intended ; for it was the Ground-work of a much larger Discourse, and he was sorry to observe the Materials so foolishly employed.

THERE is one farther Objection made by those who have answered this Book, as well as by some others, that *Peter* is frequently made to repeat Oaths and Curses. Every Reader observeth it was necessary to know that *Peter* did Swear and Curse. The Oaths are not pointed out, but only supposed, and the Idea of an Oath is not immoral, like the Idea of a prophane or immodest Speech. A Man may laugh at the Popish Folly of cursing People to Hell, and imagine them Swearing, without any Crime ; but lewd Words, or dangerous Opinions, although printed by Halves, fill the Reader's Mind with ill Ideas ; and of these the Author cannot be accused : For the judicious Reader will find, that the severest Strokes of Satyr in his Book are levelled against the modern Custom of employing Wit upon those Topics ; of which there is a remarkable Instance in the Seventh Section, as well as in several others, although perhaps once or twice expressed in too free a Manner, excusable only for the Reasons already alledged. Some Overtures have been made by a third Hand to the Bookseller for the Author's altering those Passages which he thought might require it. But, it seemeth, the Bookseller will not

hear of any such Things, being apprehensive it might spoil the Sale of the Book.

THE Author cannot conclude this Apology, without making this one Reflection; that, as Wit is the noblest and most useful Gift of human Nature, so Humour is the most agreeable: and where these two enter far into the Composition of any Work, they will render it always acceptable to the World. Now, the great Part of those who have no Share or Taste of either, but by their Pride, Pedantry, and ill Manners, lay themselves bare to the Lashes of both, think the Blow is weak, because they are insensible; and, where Wit hath any Mixture of Raillery, it is but calling it *Banter*, and the Work is done. This polite Word of theirs was first borrowed from the Bullies in *White-Fryars*; then fell among the Footmen; and at last retired to the Pedants, by whom it is applied as properly to the Productions of Wit, as if I should apply it to Sir *Isaac Newton's* Mathematicks: But, if this *Bantering*, as they call it, be so despiseable a Thing, whence cometh it to pass they have such a perpetual Itch towards it themselves? To instance only in the Answerer already mentioned; it is grievous to see him in some of his Writings at every Turn going out of his Way to be waggish, to tell us of a *Cow that pricked up her Tail*; and, in his Answer to this Discourse, he says, *it is all a Farce and a Ladle*: with other Passages equally shining. One may say of these *Impedimenta Literarum*, that Wit owes them a Shame; and they cannot take wiser Counsel than to keep out of Harms-way, or at least not to come until they are sure they are called.

To conclude. With those Allowances above-required, this Book should be read; after which, the Author conceiveth, few Things will remain, which may not be excused in a young Writer. He wrote only to the Men of Wit and Taste; and he thinketh he is not mistaken in his Accounts, when he

An APOLOGY.

xvii

he says they have been all of his Side, enough to give him the Vanity of telling his Name, wherein the World, with all its wise Conjectures, is yet very much in the dark ; which Circumstance is no disagreeable Amusement either to the Publick or himself.

THE Author is informed, That the Bookseller hath prevailed on several Gentlemen to write some explanatory Notes ; for the Goodness of which he is not to answer, having never seen any of them, nor intendeth it, until they appear in Print ; when it is not unlikely he may have the Pleasure to find Twenty Meanings which never entered into his Imagination.

June 3. 1709.

P O S T S C R I P T.

SINCE the Writing of this, which was about a Year ago, a prostitute Bookseller published a foolish Paper, under the Name of *Notes on the Tale of a Tub*, with some Account of the Author ; and with an Insolence, which I suppose is punishable by Law, hath presumed to assign certain Names. It will be enough for the Author to assure the World, that the Writer of that Paper is utterly wrong in all his Conjectures upon that Affair. The Author further asserts, that the whole Work is entirely of one Hand, which every Reader of Judgment will easily discover : The Gentleman who gave the Copy to the Bookseller being a Friend of the Author, and using no other Liberties beside that of expunging

certain Passages where now the Chasms appear under the Name of *Desiderata*. But, if any Person will prove his Claim to three Lines in the whole Book, let him step forth, and tell his Name and Titles; upon which the Bookseller shall have Orders to prefix them to the next Edition, and the Claimant shall from henceforward be acknowledged the undisputed Author.

T O

The Right Honourable

JOHN *Lord* SOMMERS.

MY LORD,

ALTHOUGH the Author hath written a large Dedication, yet that being addressed to a Prince, whom I am never likely to have the Honour of being known to; a Person besides, as far as I can observe, not at all regarded, or thought on by any of our present Writers; and being wholly free from that Slavery, which Booksellers usually lie under to the Caprices of Authors; I think it a wise Piece of Presumption to inscribe these Papers to your Lordship, and to implore your Lordship's Protection of them. God and your Lordship know their Faults, and their Merits; for, as to my own Particular, I am altogether a Stranger to the Matter; and, although every Body else should be equally ignorant, I do not fear the Sale of the Book, at all the worse upon that Score. Your Lordship's Name on the Front, in Capital Letters, will at any Time get off one Edition: Neither

would

would I desire any other Help to grow an Alderman, than a Patent for the sole Privilege of Dedicating to your Lordship.

I should now, in Right of a Dedicator, give your Lordship a List of your own Virtues, and at the same Time be very unwilling to offend your Modesty; but chiefly I should celebrate your Liberality towards Men of great Parts and small Fortunes, and give you broad Hints, that I mean myself. And I was just going on in the usual Method, to peruse a Hundred or Two of Dedications, and transcribe an Abstract, to be applied to your Lordship; but I was diverted by a certain Accident. For, upon the Covers of these Papers, I casually observed, written in large Letters, the two following Words, *DETUR DIGNISSIMO*; which, for ought I knew, might contain some important Meaning: But it unluckily fell out, that none of the Authors I employ understood *Latin*, (although I have them often in Pay to translate out of that Language,) I was therefore compelled to have Recourse to the Curate of our Parish, who Englished it thus, *Let it be given to the Worthiest*: And his Comment was, That the Author meant, his Work should be dedicated to the sublimest Genius of the Age, for Wit, Learning, Judgment, Eloquence, and Wisdom. I called at a Poet's Chamber (who works for my Shop) in an Alley hard by, shewed him the Translation, and desired his Opinion, who it was that the Author could mean? He told me, after some Consideration, that Vanity was a Thing he abhorred; but by the Description he thought Himself to be the Person aimed at: And, at the same time, he very kindly offered his own Assistance *gratis*, towards penning a Dedication to himself. I desired him, however, to give a second Guess; Why then, said he, It must be I, or my Lord *Sommers*. From thence I went to several other Wits of my Acquaintance, with no small Hazard and Weariness to my Person, from a prodigious Number of dark, winding Stairs; but

found

found them all in the same Story, both of your Lordship and themselves. Now, your Lordship is to understand, that this Proceeding was not of my own Invention; for, I have somewhere heard, it is a Maxim, that those, to whom every Body allows the second Place, have an undoubted Title to the First.

THIS infallibly convinced me, that your Lordship was the Person intended by the Author. But, being very unacquainted in the Style and Form of Dedications, I employed those Wits aforesaid to furnish me with Hints and Materials, towards a Panegyrick upon your Lordship's Virtues.

IN Two Days, they brought me Ten Sheets of Paper, filled up on every Side. They swore to me that they had ransacked whatever could be found in the Characters of *Socrates, Aristides, Epaminondas, Cato, Tully, Atticus*, and other hard Names, which I cannot now recollect. However, I have Reason to believe they imposed upon my Ignorance; because, when, I came to read over their Collections, there was not a Syllable there, but what I and every body else knew as well as themselves: Therefore I grievously suspect a Cheat, and that these Authors of mine stole and transcribed every Word, from the universal Report of Mankind. So that I look upon myself as Fifty Shillings out of Pocket, to no Manner of Purpose.

IF, by altering the Title, I could make the same Materials serve for another Dedication (as my Betters have done) it would help to make up my Loss. But I have made several Persons dip here and there in those Papers, and, before they read three Lines, they have all assured me, plainly, that they cannot possibly be applied to any Person besides your Lordship.

I EXPECTED, indeed, to have heard of your Lordship's Bravery at the Head of an Army; of your undaunted Courage, in mounting a Breach, or scaling a Wall; or to have had your Pedigree

traced in a Lineal Descent from the House of *Austria*; or of your wonderful Talent at Dress and Dancing; or your profound Knowledge in *Algebra*, *Metaphysicks*, and the Oriental Tongues. But to ply the World with an old beaten Story of your Wit, and Eloquence, and Learning, and Wisdom, and Justice, and Politeness, and Candor, and Evenness of Temper in all Scenes of Life; of that great Discernment in discovering, and Readiness in Favouring deserving Men; with forty other common Topicks; I confess I have neither Conscience, nor Countenance to do it. Because there is no Virtue, either of a Publick or Private Life, which some Circumstances of your own have not often produced upon the Stage of the World; and those few, which, for want of Occasions to exert them, might otherwise have passed unseen or unobserved by your *Friends*, your *Enemies* have at length brought to Light.

It is true, I should be very loth, the Bright Example of your Lordship's Virtues should be lost to After-Ages, both for their Sake and your own; but chiefly, because they will be so very necessary to adorn the History of a *late Reign*: And that is another Reason, why I could forbear to make a Recital of them here; because I have been told by Wise Men, that as Dedications have run for some Years past, a good Historian will not be apt to have Recourse thither in search of Characters.

THERE is one Point, wherein I think we Dedicators would do well to change our Measures; I mean, instead of running on so far upon the Praise of our Patron's *Liberality*, to spend a Word or two in admiring their *Patience*. I can put no greater Compliment on your Lordship's, than by giving you so ample an Occasion to exercise it at present; although, perhaps, I shall not be apt to reckon much Merit

James II.

Mer
ing
som
to
one

DEDICATION.

xxiii

Merit to your Lordship upon that Score ; who having been formerly used to tedious Harangues, and sometimes to as little Purpose, will be the readier to pardon this ; especially, when it is offered by one, who is with all Respect and Veneration,

My LORD,

Your Lordship's most Obedient,

and most Faithful Servant,

The Bookseller.

THE

xxii

DISCUSSION

As to your Lordship's question, who have been formerly and to certain instances, and how many to a single family, will be the result of garden this, especially when it is offered by the whole with an object and vegetation.

M. Lord,

From London, 1. 1800.

And more than 100 years.

To the Editor,

END

B
I
To
th
ha
Pa
ap
fa
Pl
th
an
th
in
a
ch
th

THE
BOOKSELLER
TO THE
READER.

IT is now Six Years since these Papers came first to my Hand, which seemeth to have been about a Twelvemonth after they were written: For the Author telleth us in his Preface to the first Treatise, that he hath calculated it for the Year 1697, and in several Passages of that Discourse, as well as the Second, it appeareth, they were written about that Time.

AS to the Author, I can give no Manner of Satisfaction: However, I am credibly informed, that this Publication is without his Knowledge; for he concludeth the Copy is lost, having lent it to a Person, since Dead, and being never in Possession of it after: So that, whether the Work received his last Hand, or whether he intended to fill up the defective Places, is like to remain a Secret.

IF I should go about to tell the Reader by what Accident I became Master of these Papers, it would, in this unbelieving Age, pass for little more than the Cant,

or Jargon of the Trade. I therefore gladly spare both him and myself so unnecessary a Trouble. There yet remaineth a difficult Question, why I published them no sooner. I forbore upon two Accounts: First, because I thought I had better Work upon my Hands; and Secondly, because I was not without some Hope of hearing from the Author, and receiving his Directions. But I have been lately alarmed with Intelligence of a surreptitious Copy, which a certain great Wit had new polished and refined; or, as our present Writers express themselves, fitted to the Humour of the Age; as they have already done, with great Felicity, to Don Quixot, Boccacini, la Bruyere, and other Authors. However, I thought it fairer Dealing, to offer the Whole Work in its Naturals. If any Gentleman will please to furnish me with a Key, in order to explain the more difficult Parts, I shall very gratefully acknowledge the Favour, and print it by itself.

THE
Epistle Dedicatory,

TO

His Royal Highness

PRINCE POSTERITY.

SIR,

I HERE present *Your Highness* with the Fruits of a very few leisure Hours, stolen from the short Intervals of a World of Business, and of an Employment quite alien from such Amusements as this; the poor Production of that Refuse of Time, which hath lain heavy upon my Hands, during a long Prorogation of Parliament, a great Dearth of Foreign News, and a tedious Fit of rainy Weather: For which, and other Reasons, it cannot chuse extremely to deserve such Patronage as that of *Your Highness*, whose numberless Virtues in so few Years make the World look upon You as the future Example to all Princes: For, although *Your Highness* is hardly got clear of Infancy, yet has the universal learned World already resolved upon appealing

C 2

to

The Citation out of Irenæus, in the Title-page, which seemeth to be all Gibberish, is a Form of Initiation used antiently by the Marcisian Hereticks. W. Wotton.

to Your future Dictates with the lowest and most resigned Submission : Fate having decreed You sole Arbiter of the Productions of human Wit, in this polite and most accomplished Age. Methinks, the Number of Appellants were enough to shock and startle any Judge of a *Genius* less unlimited than Yours : But, in order to prevent such glorious Tryals, the *Person* (it seemeth) to whose Care the Education of *Your Highness* is committed, hath resolved (as I am told) to keep you in almost an universal Ignorance of our Studies, which it is Your inherent Birth-right to inspect.

It is amazing to me, that this *Person* should have Assurance, in the Face of the Sun, to go about persuading *Your Highness*, that our Age is almost wholly illiterate, and hath hardly produced one Writer upon any Subject. I know very well, that when *Your Highness* shall come to riper Years, and have gone through the Learning of Antiquity, you will be too curious to neglect inquiring into the Authors of the very Age before You : And to think that this *Insolent*, in the Account he is preparing for Your View, designeth to reduce them to a Number so insignificant as I am ashamed to mention ; it moveth my Zeal and my Spleen for the Honour and Interest of our vast flourishing Body, as well as of myself, for whom, I know by long Experience, he hath professed, and still continueth a peculiar Malice.

It is not unlikely, that when *Your Highness* will one Day peruse what I am now writing, You may be ready to expostulate with your Governor upon the

It is the usual Style of decryed Writers to appeal to Posterity, who is here represented as a Prince in his Nonage,, and Time as his Governor ; and the Author begins in a Way very frequent with him, by personating other Writers,, who sometimes offer such Reasons and Excuses for publishing their Works, as they ought chiefly to conceal and be ashamed of.

the Credit of what I here affirm, and command Him to shew You some of our Productions. To which he will answer, (for I am well informed of his Designs) by asking *Your Highness*, where they are? And what is become of them? And pretend it a Demonstration, that there never were any, because they are not then to be found! Not to be found? Who hath mislaid them? Are they sunk in the Abyss of Things? It is certain, that in their own Nature they were *light* enough to swim upon the Surface for all Eternity. Therefore the Fault is in Him who tied Weights so heavy to their Heels, as to depress them to the Center. Is their very Essence destroyed? Who hath annihilated them? Were they drowned by *Purges*, or martyred by *Pipes*? Who administered them to the Posteriors of -----? But that it may no longer be a Doubt with *Your Highness*, who is to be the Author of this universal Ruin; I beseech You to observe that large and terrible *Scythe* which your *Governor* affects to bear continually about him. Be pleased to remark the Length and Strength, the Sharpness and Hardness of his *Nails* and *Teeth*: Consider his baneful abominable *Breath*, Enemy to Life, and Matter infectious and corrupting: And then reflect, whether it be possible for any mortal Ink and Paper of this Generation to make a suitable Resistance. Oh, that *Your Highness* would one Day resolve to disarm this Usurping * *Maitre du Palais* of his furious Engines, and bring Your Empire † *hors de Page*.

It were endless to recount the several Methods of Tyranny and Destruction, which your *Governor* is pleased to practise upon this Occasion. His inveterate Malice is such to the Writings of our Age, that of several Thousands produced yearly from this renowned City, before the next Revolution of the Sun, there is not one to be heard of: Unhappy Infants! many of them barbarously destroyed, before

Dedication to

fore they have so much as learned their *Mother-Tongue* to beg for Pity! Some he stiflcth in their Cradles, others he frighteth into Convulsions, whereof they suddenly die; some he flayeth alive, others he tear-eth Limb from Limb. Great Numbers are offered to *Moloch*; and the rest, tainted by his Breath, die of a languishing Consumption.

BUT the Concern I have most at Heart is for our Corporation of *Poets*, from whom I am preparing a Petition to *Your Highness*, to be subscribed with the Names of One Hundred Thirty Six of the first Rate, but whose immortal Productions are never likely to reach your Eyes, although each of them is now an humble and an earnest Appellant for the Laurel, and hath large comely Volumes ready to shew for a Support to his Pretensions. The *never-dying* Works of these illustrious Persons, Your Governor, Sir, hath devoted to unavoidable Death, and *Your Highness* is to be made believe, that our Age hath never arrived at the Honour to produce one single Poet.

We confess *Immortality* to be a great and powerful Goddess, but in vain we offer up to her our Devotions and our Sacrifices, if *Your Highness's Governor*, who hath usurped the *Priesthood*, must by an unparalleled Ambition and Avarice wholly intercept and devour them.

To affirm that our Age is altogether unlearned, and devoid of Writers in any Kind, seemeth to be an Assertion so bold and so false, that I have been sometime thinking, the contrary may almost be proved by uncontroulable Demonstration. It is true indeed, that although their Numbers be vast, and their Productions numerous in Proportion, yet are they hurried so hastily off the Scene, that they escape our Memory, and delude our Sight. When I first thought of this Address, I had prepared a copious List of *Titles* to present *Your Highness*, as an undisputed Argument for what I affirm. The Originals were posted fresh upon all Gates and Cor-

ners

mers of Streets ; but returning in a very few Hours to take a Review, they were all torn down, and fresh ones in their Places : I enquired after them among Readers and Booksellers ; but I enquired in vain ; the *Memorial of them was lost among Men, their Place was no more to be found* ; and I was laughed to scorn for a *Clown* and a *Pedant*, without all Taste and Refinement, little versed in the Course of *present* Affairs, and that knew nothing of what had passed in the best Companies of Court and Town. So that I can only avow in general to *Your Highness*, that we do abound in Learning and Wit ; but to fix upon Particulars, is a Task too slippery for my slender Abilities. If I should venture in a windy Day to affirm to *Your Highness*, that there is a large Cloud near the *Horizon* in the Form of a *Bear*, another in the *Zenith* with the Head of an *Asi*, a third to the Westward with Claws like a *Dragon* ; and *Your Highness* should in a few Minutes think fit to examine the Truth ; it is certain, they would all be changed in Figure and Position, new ones would arise, and all we could agree upon would be, that Clouds there were, but that I was grossly mistaken in the *Zoography* and *Topography* of them.

BUT *Your Governor*, perhaps, may still insist, and put the Question: What is then become of those immense Bales of Paper, which must needs have been employed in such Numbers of Books ? Can these also be wholly annihilate, and so of a sudden, as I pretend ? What shall I say in Return of so invidious an Objection ? It ill befits the Distance between *Your Highness* and Me, to send you for ocular Conviction to a *Jakes*, or an *Oven* ; to the Windows of a *Barwy-House*, or to a sordid *Lanthorn*. Books, like Men their Authors, have no more than one Way of coming into the World, but there are ten thousand to go out of it, and return no more.

I PROFESS to *Your Highness*, in the Integrity of my Heart, that what I am going to say is literally true this Minute I am writing: What Revolutions may

may happen, before it shall be ready for your Perusal, I can by no means warrant: However, I beg you to accept it as a Specimen of our Learning, our Politeness, and our Wit. I do therefore affirm upon the Word of a sincere Man, that there is now actually in being a certain Poet called *John Dryden*, whose Translation of *Virgil* was lately printed in a large Folio, well bound; and if diligent Search were made, for ought I know, is yet to be seen. There is another called *Nabum Tate*, who is ready to make Oath, that he hath caused many Rheams of Verse to be published, whereof both himself and his Bookseller (if lawfully required) can still produce authentick Copies; and therefore wonders why the World is pleased to make such a Secret of it. There is a Third, known by the Name of *Tom Durfey*, a Poet of a vast Comprehension, an universal Genius, and most profound Learning. There are also one *Mr. Rymer*, and one *Mr. Dennis*, most profound Criticks. There is a Person styled *Dr. Bentley*, who hath written near a Thousand Pages of immense Erudition, giving a full and true Account of a certain Squabble of wonderful Importance between himself and Bookseller: He is a Writer of infinite Wit and Humour; no Man rallieth with a better Grace, and in more sprightly Turns. Farther, I avow to Your Highness, that with these Eyes I have beheld the Person of *William Wotton*, B. D. who hath written a good sizeable Volume against a *Friend of Your Governor* (from whom, alas! he must therefore look for little Favour) in a most gentlemanly Style, adorned with the utmost Politeness and Civility; replete with Discoveries, equally valuable for their Novelty and Use; and embellished with Traits of Wit so poignant and so apposite, that he is a worthy Yokemate to his forementioned Friend.

Why should I go upon farther Particulars, which might fill a Volume with the just Elogies of my contemporary Brethren? I shall bequeath this Piece of Justice to a larger Work; wherein I intended to

write

PRINCE POSTERITY. xxxiii

write a Character of the present Set of *Wits* in our Nation : Their Persons I shall describe particularly, and at Length ; their Genius and Understandings in *Miniature*.

IN the mean time, I do here make bold to present *Your Highness* with a faithful Abstract, drawn from the Universal Body of all Arts and Sciences, intended wholly for your Service and Instruction: Nor do I doubt in the least, but *Your Highness* will peruse it as carefully, and make as considerable Improvements, as *other young Princes* have already done, by the many Volumes of the late Years written for a Help to their Studies.

THAT *Your Highness* may advance in Wisdom and Virtue, as well as Years, and at last outshine all Your Royal Ancestors, shall be the daily Prayer of,

S I R,

Decemb.
1697.

Your Highness's

Most devoted, &c.

T H E

XXXXX Y T I O U R T O C I D M A S

P

T

dees

Ap

Inte

pick

ver

mu

Pro

for
in

ing
 Eng

пхе
то

well
how

noi

and

dra

DOI

ed

ent

bro

10

•

THE PREFACE.

THE Wits of the present Age being so very numerous and penetrating, it seemeth the Grantees of *Church* and *State* begin to fall under horrible Apprehensions, lest these Gentlemen, during the Intervals of a long Peace, should find Leisure to pick Holes in the weak Sides of Religion and Government. To prevent which, there hath been much Thought employed of late, upon certain Projects, for taking off the Force and Edge of those formidable Enquirers, from canvassing and reasoning upon such delicate Points. They have at length fixed upon one, which will require some Time, as well as Cost, to perfect. Mean while, the Danger hourly increasing by new Levies of Wits, all appointed (as there is Reason to fear) with Pen, Ink, and Paper, which may, at an Hour's Warning, be drawn out into Pamphlets, and other offensive Weapons, ready for immediate Execution; it was judged of absolute Necessity, that some present Expedient be thought on, 'till the main Design can be brought to Maturity. To this End, at a Grand Com-

Committee some Days ago, this important Discovery was made by a certain curious and refined Observer, That Seamen have a Custom when they meet a *Whale*, to fling him out an empty *Tub*, by Way of Amusement, to divert him from laying violent Hands upon the Ship. This Parable was immediately mythologized : The *Whale* was interpreted to be *Hobbes's Leviathan*, which tosseth and playeth with all other Schemes of Religion and Government, whereof a great many are hollow, and dry, and empty, and noisy, and wooden, and given to Rotation. This is the *Leviathan* from whence the terrible Wits of our Age are said to borrow their Weapons. The *Ship in Danger* is easily understood to be its old Antitype, the *Commonwealth*. But, how to analyze the *Tub*, was a Matter of Difficulty; when, after long Enquiry and Debate, the literal Meaning was preserved : And it was decreed, that in order to prevent these *Leviathans* from tossing and sporting with the *Commonwealth*, (which of itself is too apt to *fluctuate*) they should be diverted from that Game by a *Tale of a Tub*. And my Genius being conceived to lye not unhappily that Way, I had the Honour done me to be engaged in the Performance.

THIS is the sole Design in publishing the following Treatise, which I hope will serve for an *Interim* of some Months, to employ those unquiet Spirits, until the perfecting of that great Work : Into the Secret of which it is reasonable the courteous Reader should have some little Light.

IT is intended, that a large Academy be erected, capable of containing nine Thousand seven hundred forty and three Persons ; which, by modest Computation, is reckoned to be pretty near the current Number of *Wits* in this Island. These are to be disposed into the several Schools of this Academy,

demey, and there pursue those Studies to which their Genius most inclineth them. The Undertaker himself will publish his Proposals with all convenient Speed, to which I shall refer the curious Reader for a more particular Account ; mentioning at present only a few of the Principal Schools. There is first, a large *Pederastick* School, with *French* and *Italian* Masters. There is also the *Spelling* School, a *very spacious Building* : The School of *Looking-Glasses* : The School of *Swearing* : The School of *Criticks* : The School of *Salivation* : The School of *Hobby-Horses* : The School of *Poetry* : * The School of *Tops* : The School of *Spleen* : The School of *Gaming* : With many others too tedious to recount. No Person to be admitted Member into any of these Schools, without an Attestation under two sufficient Persons Hands, certifying him to be a *Wit*.

BUT, to return. I am sufficiently instructed in the Principal Duty of a Preface, if my Genius were capable of arriving at it. Thrice have I forced my Imagination to make the *Tour* of my Invention, and thrice it hath returned empty ; the latter having been wholly drained by the following Treatise. Not so, my more successful Brethren, the *Moderns*, who will by no Means let slip a Preface or Dedication, without some notable distinguishing Stroke, to surprize the Reader at the Entry, and kindle a wonderful Expectation of what is to ensue. Such was that of a most ingenious Poet, who, soliciting

VOL. XI.

d

his

* This I think the Author should have omitted, it being of the very same Nature with the School of Hobby-Horses, if one may venture to censure one who is so severe a Censurer of others, perhaps with too little Distinction.

his Brain for something new, compared himself to
 † Hor. to the *Hangman*, and his Patron to
 the *Patient*: This was † *Insigne recens*
 † Reading that necessary and noble † Course of
indictum ore alio. When I went thro'
 Prefaces, Study, I had the Happiness to observe
 &c. many such egregious Touches, which

I shall not injure the Authors by trans-
 planting; because I have remarked, that nothing
 is so very tender as a *Modern* Piece of Wit, and
 which is apt to suffer so much in the Carriage. Some
 Things are extremely witty *To-Day*, or *jesting*, or
in this Place, or *at eight o'Clock*, or *over a Bottle*, or
spoke by Mr. What d'y'call'um, or *in a Summer's*
Morning: Any of which, by the smallest Transposal
 or Misapplication, is utterly annihilate. Thus, *Wit*
 hath it Walks and Purlicus, out of which it may
 not stray the Breadth of an Hair, upon Peril of be-
 ing lost. The *Moderns* have artfully fixed this *Mer-*
cure, and reduced it to the Circumstances of Time,
 Place, and Person. Such a Jest there is, that will
 not pass out of *Covent-Garden*, and such a one,
 that is no where intelligible but at *Hide-Park* Cor-
 ner. Now, although it sometimes tenderly affecteth
 me to consider, that all the towardly Passages I
 shall deliver in the following Treatise, will grow
 quite out of Date and Relish with the first shifting
 of the present Scheme; yet I must need subscribe
 to the Justice of this Proceeding: Because I cannot
 imagine why we should be at Expence to furnish
 Wit for succeeding Ages, when the former have
 made no Sort of Provision for ours; wherein I speak
 the Sentiment of the newest, and consequently the
 most Orthodox Refiners, as well as my own. How-
 ever, being extremely solicitous, that every ac-
 complished Person, who hath got into the Taste of
 Wit,

† Something extraordinary, new, and never hit upon
 before.

Wit, calculated for this present Month of *August*, 1697, should descend to the very *Bottom* of all the *Sublime*, throughout this Treatise; I hold it fit to lay down this general Maxim. Whatever Reader desireth to have a thorough Comprehension of an Author's Thoughts, cannot take a better Method than by putting himself into the Circumstances and Postures of Life, that the Writer was in, upon every important Passage as it flowed from his Pen; for this will introduce a Parity and strict Correspondence of Ideas between the Reader and the Author. Now to assist the diligent Reader in so delicate an Affair, as far as Brevity will permit, I have recollected, that the shrewdest Pieces of this Treatise were conceived in Bed, in a Garret: At other Times (for a Reason best known to my self) I thought fit to sharpen my Invention with Hunger; and, in general, the whole Work was begun, continued, and ended, under a long Course of Physick, and a great Want of Money. Now I do affirm, it will be absolutely impossible for the candid Peruser to go along with me in a great many bright Passages, unless, upon the several Difficulties emergent, he will please to capacitate and prepare himself by these Directions. And this I lay down as my Principal *Postulatum*.

BECAUSE I have professed to be a most devoted Servant of all *Modern* Forms, I apprehend some curious *Wit* may object against me, for proceeding thus far in a Preface, without declaiming, according to the Custom, against the Multitude of Writers, whereof the whole Multitude of Writers most reasonably complains. I am just come from perusing some Hundreds of Prefaces, wherein the Authors do, at the very beginning, address the gentle Reader concerning this enormous Grievance. Of these I have preserved a few Examples, and shall

set them down as near as my Memory hath been able to retain them.

ONE begins thus ;

For a Man to set up for a Writer, when the Press swarms with, &c.

ANOTHER ;

The Tax upon Paper does not lessen the Number of Scriblers, who daily pester, &c.

ANOTHER ;

When every little Would-be-wit takes Pen in Hand, 'tis in vain to enter the Lists, &c.

ANOTHER ;

To observe what Trash the Press swarms with, &c.

ANOTHER ;

SIR, It is merely in Obedience to your Commands, that I venture into the Publick; for who upon a less Consideration would be of a Party with such a Rabble of Scriblers ? &c.

Now, I have two Words in my own Defence against this Objection. First, I am far from granting the Number of Writers a Nuisance to our Nation, having strenuously maintained the contrary in several Parts of the following Discourse. Secondly, I do not well understand the Justice of this Proceeding,

ceeding, because I observe many of these Polite Prefaces to be not only from the same Hand, but from those who are most voluminous in their several Productions. Upon which I shall tell the Reader a short Tale.

A Mountebank in Leicester-Fields had drawn a huge Assembly about him. Among the rest, a fat unweildy Fellow, half stifled in the Press, would be every Fit crying out, Lord ! What a filthy Crowd is here ? Pray, good People, give Way a little. Bless me ! What a Devil has raked this Rabble together ? Z-----ds, what squeezing is this ! Honest Friend, remove your Elbow. At last, a Weaver that stood next him could hold no longer : A Plague confound you (said he) for an overgrown Sloven ; and who (in the Devil's Name) I wonder, helps to make up the Crowd half so much as yourself ? Don't you consider (with a Pox) that you take up more Room with that Carcase than any Five here ? Is not the Place as free for us as for you ? Bring your own Guts to a reasonable Compass (and be d---d) and then I'll engage we shall have Room enough for us all.

THERE are certain common Privileges of a Writer, the Benefit whereof, I hope, there will be no Reason to doubt: particularly, that where I am not understood, it shall be concluded, that something very useful and profound is couched underneath. And again, that whatever Word or Sentence is printed in a different Character shall be judged to contain something extraordinary either of *Wit* or *Sublime*.

As for the Liberty I have thought fit to take of praising myself, upon some Occasions or none ; I am sure it will need no Excuse, if a Multitude of great Examples be allowed sufficient Authority: For it is here to be noted, that *Praise* was originally

nally a Pension paid by the World : But the *Moderns*, finding the Trouble and Charge too great in collecting it, have lately bought out the *Fee-simple*; since which Time, the Right of Presentation is wholly in ourselves. For this Reason it is, that when an Author maketh his own Elogy, he useth a certain Form to declare and insist upon his Title, which is commonly in these or the like Words, *I speak without Vanity*; which I think plainly sheweth it to be a Matter of Right and Justice. Now I do here once for all declare, that in every Encounter of this Nature, through the following Treatise, the Form aforesaid is implied; which I mention, to save the Trouble of repeating it on so many Occasions.

It is a great Ease to my Conscience, that I have written so elaborate and useful a Discourse, without one Grain of Satyr intermixed; which is the sole Point wherein I have taken Leave to dissent from the famous Originals of our Age and Country. I have observed some Satyrists to use the Publick much at the Rate that Pedants do a naughty Boy ready Horfed for Discipline; first expostulate the Case, then plead the Necessity of the Rod from great Provocations, and conclude every Period with a Lash. Now, if I know any Thing of Mankind, these Gentlemen might very well spare their Reproof and Correction; for there is not, through all Nature, another so callous and insensible a Member as the *World's Posteriors*, whether you apply to it the *Toe* or the *Birch*. Besides, most of our late Satyrists seem to lye under a Sort of Mistake, that because Nettles have the Prerogative to sting, therefore all other *Weeds* must do so too. I make not this Comparison out of the least Design to detract from these worthy Writers: For it is well known among *Mythologists*, that *Weeds* have the Preeminence over all other Vegetables; and therefore the
first

first * *Monarch* of this Island, whose Taste and Judgment were so acute and refined, did very wisely root out the *Roses* from the Collar of the *Order*, and plant the *Thistles* in their Stead, as the nobler Flower of the Two. For which Reason, it is conjectured by profounder Antiquaries, that the Satyric Itch, so prevalent in this Part of our Island, was first brought among us from beyond the *Tweed*. Here may it long flourish and abound; may it survive and neglect the Scorn of the World with as much Ease and Contempt, as the World is insensible to the Lashes of it. May their own Dulness, or that of this Party, be no Discouragement for the Authors to proceed; but let them remember, it is with *Wits* as with *Razors*, which are never so apt to cut those they are employed on, as when they have *lost their Edge*. Besides, those whose Teeth are too rotten to bite are best of all others qualified to revenge that Defect with their Breath.

I AM not like other Men, to envy or undervalue the Talents I cannot reach; for which Reason I must needs bear a true Honour to this large eminent Sect of our *British* Writers. And I hope, this little Panegyrick will not be offensive to their Ears, since it hath the Advantage of being only designed for themselves. Indeed, Nature herself hath taken Order, that Fame and Honour should be purchased at a better Pennyworth by Satyr, than by any other Productions of the Brain; the World being soonest provoked to *Praise* by *Lashes*, as Men are to *Love*. There is a Problem in an ancient Author, why Dedications, and other Bundles of Flattery run all upon stale musty Topicks, without the smallest Tincture of any Thing new; not only to the Torment and Nauseating of the *Christian* Reader, but (if not suddenly prevented) to the univer-
sal

* James I. styled King of Great Britain.

fal spreading of that Pestilent Disease, the Lethargy, in this Island : Whereas, there is very little Satyr which hath not something in it untouched before. The Defects of the former are usually imputed to the Want of Invention among those who are Dealers in that Kind : But, I think, with a great deal of Injustice ; the Solution being easy and natural. For, the Materials of Panegyrick, being very few in Number, have been long since exhausted : For, as Health is but one Thing, and hath been always the same, whereas Diseases are by Thousands, besides new and daily Additions ; so, all the Virtues that have been ever in Mankind are to be counted upon a few Fingers, but his Follies and Vices are innumerable ; and Time adds hourly to the Heap. Now, the utmost a poor Poet can do, is to get by Heart a List of the Cardinal Virtues, and deal them with his utmost Liberality to his Hero or his Patron : He may ring the Changes as far as it will go, and vary his Phrase, until he hath talked round ; but the Reader

* Plutarch. quickly findeth, it is all * *Pork*, with a little Variety of Sawce : For there is no inventing Terms of Art beyond our Ideas ; and when Ideas are exhausted, Terms of Art must be so too.

BUT, although the Matter for Panegyrick were as fruitful as the Topicks of Satyr, yet would it not be hard to find out a sufficient Reason, why the latter will be always better received than the first. For this, being bestowed only upon one or a few Persons at a Time, is sure to raise Envy, and consequently ill Words from the rest, who have no Share in the Blessing : But Satyr, being levelled at all, is never resented for an Offence by any, since every individual Person maketh bold to understand it of others, and very wisely removeth his particular Part of the Burthen upon the Shoulders of the

the
bear
flect
land,
fore
weal
right
rail
Stag
of th
bolus
othe
the
up
confi
Wh
this.
Rhet
tell
" no
" th
" a
" A
new
ed b
you
far
as a
fart
may
For
Diff
may
Cou
you
tion
eve
it f
Bu

the World, which are broad enough, and able to bear it. To this Purpose, I have sometimes reflected upon the Difference between *Athens* and *England*, with Respect to the Point before us. In the *Attick* * Common-wealth it was the Privilege and Birth-right of every Citizen and Poet to rail aloud and in Publick, or to expose upon the Stage, by Name, any Person they pleased, although of the greatest Figure, whether a *Creon*, an *Hyperbolus*, an *Alcibiades*, or a *Demosthenes*. But, on the other Side, the least reflecting Word let fall against the People in general was immediately caught up and revenged upon the Authors, however considerable for their Quality or their Merits. Whereas in *England* it is just the Reverse of all this. Here you may securely display your utmost Rhetorick against Mankind in the Face of the World; tell them, “*That all are gone astray; that there is none that doeth good, no not one; that we live in the very Dregs of Time; that Knavery and Atheism are Epidemick as the Pox; that Honesty is fled with Astrea;*” with any other Common-places equally new and eloquent, which are furnished by the * *Splendida bilis*. And when * Horat. you have done, the whole Audience, far from being offended, shall return you Thanks, as a Deliverer of precious and useful Truths. Nay farther, It is but to venture your Lungs, and you may preach in *Covent-Garden* against Foppery, and Fornication, and *something else*: Against Pride, and Dissimulation, and Bribery, at *White-Hall*: You may expose Rapine and Injustice in the *Inns of Court Chappel*: And in a *City Pulpit* be as fierce as you please against Avarice, Hypocrisy, and Extortion. It is but a *Ball* bandied to and fro, and every Man carrieth a *Racket* about him to strike it from himself among the rest of the Company. But, on the other Side, whoever should mistake the Nature

Nature of Things so far, as to drop but a single Hint in publick, How *such a one* starved half the Fleet, and half-poisoned the rest : How *such a one*, from a true Principle of *Love and Honour*, payeth no Debts but for *Wenches and Play* : How *such a one* hath got a Clap, and runs out of his Estate : * How *Paris*, bribed by *Juno and Venus*, loth to offend either Party, slept out the whole Cause on the Bench : Or, how *such an Orator* maketh long Speeches in the Senate, with much Thought, little Sense, and to no Purpose : Whoever, I say, should venture to be thus particular, must expect to be imprisoned for *Scandalum Magnatum*, to have *Challenges* sent him, to be sued for *Defamation*, and to be brought before the Bar of the House.

BUT I forgot that I am expatiating on a Subject, wherein I have no Concern, having neither a Talent nor an Inclination for Satyr. On the other Side, I am so entirely satisfied with the whole present Procedure of human Things, that I have been for some Years preparing Materials towards *A Panegyrick upon the World* ; to which I intended to add a Second Part, entitled, *A modest Defence of the Proceedings of the Rabble in all Ages*. Both these I had Thoughts to publish, by Way of Appendix to the following Treatise ; but, finding my Common-Place-Book fill much slower than I had Reason to expect, I have chosen to defer them to another Occasion. Besides, I have been unhappily prevented in that Design by a certain Domestick Misfortune ; in the Particulars whereof, although it would be very seasonable, and much in the *Modern Way*, to inform

* *Juno and Venus are Money and a Mistress, very powerful Bribes to a Judge, if Scandal says true. I remember such Reflections were cast about that Time, but I cannot fix the Person intended here.*

The PREFACE.

xlvii

inform the *gentle Reader* ; and would also be of great Assistance towards extending this Preface into the Size now in Vogue, which, by Rule, ought to be *large*, in Proportion, as the subsequent Volume is *small* : Yet I shall now dismiss our impatient Reader from any farther Attendance at the *Porch* ; and having duly prepared his Mind by a preliminary Discourse, shall gladly introduce him to the sublime Mysteries that ensue.

A.

101
The first of these is the
the second is the
the third is the
the fourth is the
the fifth is the
the sixth is the
the seventh is the
the eighth is the
the ninth is the
the tenth is the

T

V

alt
the
the
Pro
enc
it b

hat
bur
of
cor
wh
ten
fee

A

TALE of a TUB.

SECTION I.

The INTRODUCTION.

WHOEVER hath an Ambition to be heard in a Crowd, must press, and squeeze, and thrust, and climb with indefatigable Pains, until he hath exalted himself to a certain Degree of Altitude above them. Now, in all Assemblies, although you wedge them ever so close, we may observe this peculiar Property; that over their Heads there is Room enough; but how to reach it, is the difficult Point; it being as hard to get quit of *Number* as of *Hell*;

* ---- *Evadere ad auras,
Hoc opus, hic labor est.*

To this End, the Philosopher's Way in all Ages hath been by erecting certain *Edifices in the Air*; but, whatever Practice and Reputation these Kinds of Structures have formerly possessed, or may still continue in, not excepting even that of *Socrates*, when he was suspended in a Basket to help Contemplation; I think, with due Submission, they seem to labour under two Inconveniencies. *First,* That

* *But to return and view the chearful Skies;
In this the Task and mighty Labour lies.*

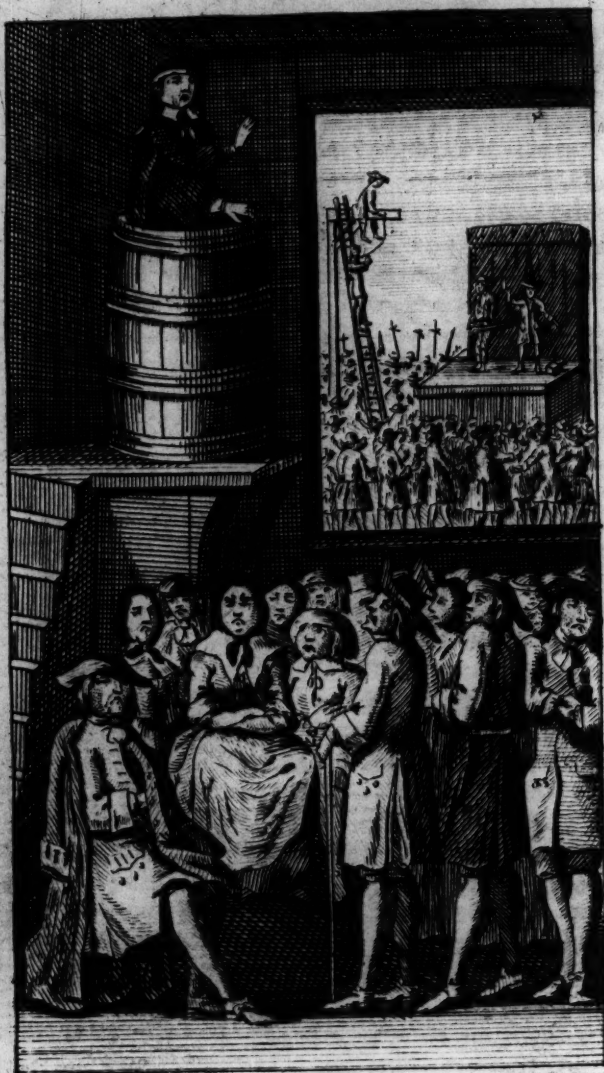
That the Foundations being laid too high, they have been often out of *Sight*, and ever out of *Hearing*. Secondly, That the Materials, being very transitory, have suffered much from Inclemencies of Air, especially in these North-West Regions.

THEREFORE, towards the just Performance of this great Work, there remain but three Methods that I can think on; whereof the Wisdom of our Ancestors being highly sensible, hath, to encourage all aspiring Adventurers, thought fit to erect three wooden Machines, for the Use of those Orators who desire to talk much without Interruption. These are, the *Pulpit*, the *Ladder*, and the *Stage-Itinerant*. For, as to the *Bar*, although it be compounded of the same Matter, and designed for the same Use, it cannot however be well allowed the Honour of a fourth, by reason of its level or inferior Situation, exposing it to perpetual Interruption from Collaterals. Neither can the *Bench* itself, although raised to a proper Eminency, put in a better Claim, whatever its Advocates insist on. For, if they please to look into the original Design of its Erection, and the Circumstances or Adjuncts subservient to that Design, they will soon acknowledge the present Practice exactly correspondent to the primitive Institution, and both to answer the Etymology of the Name, which in the *Phœnician* Tongue is a Word of great Signification, importing, if literally interpreted, *The Place of Sleep*; but in common Acceptation, *A Seat well bolstered and cushioned, for the Repose of old and gouty Limbs: Senes ut in otia tuta recedant*. Fortune being indebted to them this Part of Retaliation, that, as formerly, they have long *Talked*, whilst others *Slept*, so now they may *Sleep* as long whilst others *Talk*.

BUT, if no other Argument could occur to exclude the *Bench* and the *Bar* from the List of Oratorical Machines, it were sufficient, that the Admission of them would overthrow a Number, which I was resolved to establish, whatever Argument it might cost me; in Imitation of that prudent Method,

they
ar-
un-
of

of
ods
our
ge
ree
ors
on.
ge-
m-
he
he
fe-
on
al-
et-
or,
its
b-
ge
he
y-
ue
li-
n-
n-
in
m
ey
ey
x-
a-
f-
I
it
e-
d.



Introduction.

Page 3.

th
gu
be
be
to
fin
in
wi
th
No
T
ful
De
pu
up
vin
El
ral
an
Pla
the
on
ma
it
vey
me
in
tre
all
to
wh
its
a
C
For
try
Unc
Ora
agre

thod, observed by many other Philosophers and great Clerks, whose chief Art in Division hath been, to grow fond of some proper mystical Number, which their Imaginations have rendered Sacred to a Degree, that they force common Reason to find Room for it in every Part of Nature; reducing, including, and adjusting every *Genus* and *Species* within that Compass, by coupling some against their Wills, and banishing others at any Rate. Now, among all the rest, the profound Number *THREE* is that which hath most employed my sublimest Speculations, nor ever without wonderful Delight. There is now in the Press, (and will be published next Term) a panegyrical Essay of mine upon this Number; wherein I have, by most convincing Proofs, not only reduced the *Senses* and the *Elements* under its Banner, but brought over several Deserters from its two great Rivals *SEVEN* and *NINE*.

Now, the first of these Oratorical Machines in Place, as well as Dignity, is the *Pulpit*. Of *Pulpits*, there are in this Island several Sorts; but I esteem only That made of Timber from the *Sylva Caledonia*, which agrees very well with our Climate. If it be upon its Decay, it is the better, both for Conveyance of Sound, and for other Reasons to be mentioned by-and-by. The Degree of Perfection in Shape and Size, I take to consist in being extremely narrow, with little Ornament, and best of all without a Cover; (for by antient Rule, it ought to be the only uncovered *Vessel* in every Assembly where it is rightfully used) by which means, from its near Resemblance to a Pillory, it will ever have a mighty Influence on human Ears.

Of *Ladders* I need say nothing: It is observed by Foreigners themselves, to the Honour of our Country, that we excel all Nations in our Practice and Understanding of this Machine. The ascending Orators do not only oblige their Audience in the agreeable Delivery, but the whole World in their

early Publication of their Speeches; which I look upon as the choicest Treasury of our *British Eloquence*, and whereof I am informed, that worthy Citizen and Bookseller, Mr. *John Dunton*, hath made a faithful and a painful Collection, which he shortly designeth to publish in twelve Volumes in Folio, illustrated with Copper-Plates. A Work highly useful and curious, and altogether worthy of such a Hand.

THE last Engine of Orators is the * *Stage Itinerant* erected with much Sagacity, † *sub Jove pluvio, in trivis & quadrivis*. It is the great Seminary of the two former, and its Orators are sometimes preferred to the one, and sometimes to the other, in Proportion to their Deservings; there being a strict and perpetual Intercourse between all three.

FROM this accurate Deduction, it is manifest, that for obtaining Attention in Publick, there is of Necessity required a *superior Position of Place*. But although this Point be generally granted, yet the Cause is little agreed in; and it seemeth to me, that very few Philosophers have fallen into a true, natural Solution of this *Phenomenon*. The deepest Account, and the most fairly digested of any I have yet met with, is this, That Air being a heavy Body, and therefore (according to the

* *Lucret.* System of * *Epicurus*) continually descending, must needs be more so, when loaden and pressed down by Words; which are also Bodies of much Weight and Gravity, as it is manifest from those deep Impressions they make and leave upon us; and therefore must be delivered from a due Altitude, or else they

* Is the Mountebank's Stage, whose Orators the Author determineth either to the Gallows, or a Conventicle.

† In the open Air, and in Streets where the greatest Resort is.

they will neither carry a good Aim, nor fall down with a sufficient Force.

* *Corpoream quodque enim vocem constare fatendum est, Et sonitum, quoniam possunt impellere Sensus.*

Lucr. Lib. 4.

AND I am the readier to favour this Conjecture, from a common Observation, That, in the several Assemblies of these Orators, Nature itself hath instructed the Hearers, to stand with their Mouths open, and erected parallel to the Horizon, so as they may be intersected by a perpendicular Line from the Zenith to the Center of the Earth. In which Position, if the Audience be well compact, every one carries Home a Share, and little or nothing is lost.

I CONFESS, there is something yet more refined in the Contrivance and Structure of our modern Theatres. For, first, the Pit is sunk below the Stage, with due Regard to the Institution above deduced; that whatever *weighty* Matter shall be delivered thence (whether it be *Lead* or *Gold*) may fall plum into the Jaws of certain *Criticks* (as I think they are called) which stand ready open to devour them. Then, the Boxes are built round, and raised to a Level with the Scene, in Deference to the Ladies; because, that large Portion of Wit, laid out in raising Prurientes and Protuberances, is observed to run much upon a Line, and ever in a Circle. The whining Passions, and little starved Conceits, are gently wafted up by their own extreme Levity, to the middle Region, and there fix, and are frozen by the frigid Understandings of the Inhabitants. Bombastry and Buffoonry, by Nature lofty and light, soar highest of all, and would be lost in the Roof, if the prudent Architect had not (with much Foresight)

* *It is certain then, that Voice that thus can wound, Is all material; Body every Sound.*

Foreſight) contrived for them a fourth Place, called *The Twelve-penny Gallery*, and there planted a ſuitable Colony, who greedily intercept them in their Paſſage.

Now this Phyſico-logical Scheme of Oratorical Receptacles or Machines containeth a great Myſtery; being a Type, a Sign, an Emblem, a Shadow, a Symbol, bearing Analogy to the ſpacious Commonwealth of Writers, and to thoſe Methods by which they muſt exalt themſelves to a certain Eminency above the inferior World. By the *Pulpit* are adumbrated the Writings of our *Modern Saints* in *Great Britain*, as they have ſpiritualized and refined them from the Droſs and Groſſeneſs of *Senſe* and *Human Reaſon*. The Matter, as we have ſaid, is of rotten Wood, and that upon two Conſiderations: Becauſe it is the Quality of rotten Wood to give *Light* in the Dark; and, ſecondly, becauſe its Cavities are full of Worms: Which is a * Type with a Pair of Handles, having a Reſpect to the two principal Qualifications of the Orator, and the two different Fates attending upon his Works.

THE *Ladder* is an adequate Symbol of *Faction* and of *Poetry*, to both of which ſo noble a Number of Authors are indebted for their Fame. † Of *Faction*, becauſe

Hiatus in

MS.

Of *Poetry*, becauſe its Orators do *perorare* with a Song; and becauſe

* The two principal Qualifications of a Fanatick Preacher are, his *Inward Light*, and his *Head full of Maggots*; and the two different Fates of his Writings are, to be burnt or Worm-eaten.

† Here is a pretended Defect in the Manuscript; and this is very frequent with our Author, either when

he

INTRODUCTION.

because climbing up by slow Degrees, Fate is sure to turn them off before they can reach within many Steps of the Top: And because it is a Preferment, attained by transferring of Propriety, and a confounding of *Meum* and *Tuum*.

UNDER the *Stage-Itinerant* are couched those Productions designed for the Pleasure and Delight of mortal Man; such as *Six Penny-worth of Wit*, *Westminster Dralleries*, *Delightful Tales*, *Compleat jesters*, and the like; by which the Writers of and for *GRUB-STREET*, have in these latter Ages so nobly triumphed over *Time*; have clipped his Wings, pared his Nails, filed his Teeth, turned back his Hour-glass, blunted his Scythe, and drawn the Hob-Nails out of his Shoes. It is under this Class I have presumed to list my present Treatise, being just come from having the Honour conferred upon me, to be adopted a Member of that illustrious Fraternity.

Now, I am not unaware, how the Productions of the *Grub-street* Brotherhood have, of late Years, fallen under many Prejudices; nor how it hath been the perpetual Employment of two junior start-up Societies to ridicule them and their Authors, as unworthy their established Post in the Commonwealth of Wit and Learning. Their own Consciences will easily inform them, whom I mean: Nor has the World been so negligent a Looker-on, as not to observe the continual Efforts made by the Societies of * *Gresham* and

he thinketh he cannot say any Thing worth reading; or, when he hath no Mind to enter on the Subject; or, when it is a Matter of little Moment; or, perhaps, to amuse his Reader (whereof he is frequently very fond); or, lastly, with some satyrical Intention.

* *Gresham* College, founded by Sir THOMAS GRESHAM, in London, in the Year 1575, for divers Persons (unmarried Men) duly qualified to read Lectures

of *Will's, to edify a Name and Reputation upon the Ruin of OURS. And this is yet a more feeling Grief to Us, upon the Regards of Tenderness as as well as of Justice, when we reflect on their Proceedings, not only as unjust, but as ungrateful, undutiful, and unnatural. For, how can it be forgot by the World or themselves, (to say nothing of our own Records, which are full and clear in the Point) that they both are Seminaries, not only of our *Planting*, but our *Watering* too? I am informed, our two *Rivals* have lately made an Offer to enter into the Lists, with united Forces, and challenge us to a Comparison of Books, both as to *Weight* and *Number*. In return to which, (with Licence from our *President*) I humbly offer two Answers: *First*,

We say, the Proposal is like that which
 † *Viz. A. Archimedes* made upon a † *smaller* About moving fair, including an Impossibility in the the Earth. Practice: For, where can they find Scales of *Capacity* enough for the first, or an *Arithmetician* of *Capacity* enough for the second Point. *Secondly*, We are ready to accept the Challenge, but with this Condition, that a third indifferent Person be assigned, to whose impartial Judgment it shall be left to decide, which Society each Book, Treatise or Pamphlet, doth most properly belong to. This Point, God knoweth, is very far from being fixed at present: For, we are ready to produce a Catalogue of some thousands, which in all common Justice ought to be entitled to our Fraternity; but by the revolted and new-fangled Writers,

Lectures therein daily, in Divinity, Astronomy, Musick, Geometry, Law, Physick, and Rhetoric, with a Salary of fifty Pounds a Year to each, and magnificent Apartments in the said House.

* *WILL's Coffee-House* was formerly the Place where the Poets usually met; which, although it be yet fresh in Memory, yet in some Years it may be forgot, and want this Explanation.

INTRODUCTION.

9

Writers, most perfidiously ascribed to the others. Upon all which, we think it very unbecoming our Prudence, that the Determination should be remitted to the Authors themselves; when our Adversaries by Briguing and Caballing have caused so universal a Defection from us, that the greatest Part of our Society hath already deserted to them, and our nearest Friends begin to stand aloof, as if they were half-ashamed to own us.

THIS is the utmost I am authorized to say upon so ungrateful and melancholy a Subject; because we are extremely unwilling to inflame a Controversy, whose Continuance may be so fatal to the Interests of us all, desiring much rather that Things be amicably composed; and we shall so far advance on our Side, as to be ready to receive the two *Prodigals* with open Arms, whenever they shall think fit to return from their *Hushes* and their *Harlots*; which I think, from the * present * *Virtuoso* Course of their Studies, they most properly may be said to be engaged in; and *modern* and, like an indulgent Parent, continue to them our Affection and our Blessing.

But the greatest Maim given to that general Reception, which the Writings of our Society have formerly received, (next to the transitory Estate of all sublunary Things) hath been a superficial Vein among many Readers of the present Age, who will by no means be persuaded to inspect beyond the Surface and the Rind of Things; whereas, *Wisdom* is a *Fox*, who, after long hunting, will at last cost you the Pains to dig out: It is a *Cheese*, which, by how much the richer, has the thicker, the homelier, and the coarser Coat; and whereof, to a judicious Palate, the *Maggots* are the best: It is a *Sack-potter*, wherein the deeper you go, you will find it the sweeter. *Wisdom* is a *Hen*, whose *Cackling* we must value and consider, because it is attended with an *Egg*: But then, lastly, it is a *Nut*, which, unless you

you choose with Judgment, may cost you a Tooth, and pay you with nothing but a *Worm*. In Consequence of these momentous Truths, the *Grubæan* Sages have always chosen to convey their Precepts and their Arts, shut up within the Vehicles of Types and Fables, which having been perhaps more careful and curious in adorning, than was altogether necessary, it has fared with these Vehicles after the usual Fate of Coaches over-finely painted and gilt; that the transitory Gazers have so dazzled their Eyes, and filled their Imaginations with the outward Lustre, as neither to regard or consider the Person or the Parts of the Owner within. A Misfortune we undergo with somewhat less Reluctancy, because it hath been common to us with *Pythagoras*, *Æsop*, *Socrates*, and others of our Predecessors.

HOWEVER, that neither the World nor our selves may any longer suffer by such Misunderstandings, I have been prevailed upon, after much Importunity from my Friends, to travel in a compleat and laborious Dissertation upon the prime Productions of our Society; which, besides their beautiful Externals for the Gratification of superficial Readers, have darkly and deeply couched under them the most finished and refined Systems of all Sciences and Arts; as I do not doubt to lay open, by untwisting or unwinding; and either to draw up by Exantlation, or display by Incision.

THIS great Work was entered upon, some Years ago, by one of our most eminent Members: He began with the History of * *Reynard the Fox*, but neither lived to publish his Essay, nor to proceed farther in so useful an Attempt, which is very much lamented, because the Discovery he made, and communicated

* *The Author seems here to be mistaken; for I have seen a Latin Edition of Reynard the Fox, above an hundred Years old, which I take to be the Original; for the rest, it has been thought by many People to contain some Satyrical Design in it.*

communicated with his Friends, is now universally received; nor do I think any of the Learned will dispute that famous Treatise to be a compleat Body of Civil Knowledge, and the *Revelation* or rather the *Apocalypse* of all State Arcana. But the Progress I have made is much greater, having already finished my Annotations upon several Dozens; from some of which, I shall impart a few Hints to the candid Reader, as far as will be necessary to the Conclusion at which I aim.

THE first Piece I have handled, is that of *Tom Thumb*, whose Author was a *Pythagorean* Philosopher. This dark Treatise contains the whole Scheme of the *Metempsychosis*, deducing the Progress of the Soul through all her Stages.

The next is *Dr. Faustus*, penned by *Artephius*, an Author *bonæ notæ*, and an *Adeptus*: He published it in the * Nine Hundred * *He lived* Eighty-fourth Year of his Age. This *a Thousand*. Writer proceeds wholly by *Reincarnation*, or in the *via humida*: and the Marriage between *Faustus* and *Helen*, doth most conspicuously dilucidate the fermenting of the *Male* and *Female Dragon*.

WHITTINGTON and his Cat, is the Work of that mysterious Rabbi, *Jehuda Hannasi*, containing a Defence of the *Gemara* of the *Jerusalem Misna*, and its just Preference to that of *Babylon*, contrary to the vulgar Opinion.

THE *Hind and Panther*. This is the Master-piece of a famous Writer † now † *Viz. in* living, intended for a compleat Ab- *the Year* tract of Sixteen Thousand School- 1698.
men from *Scotus* to *Bellarmin*.

TOMMY POTTS. Another Piece, supposed by the same Hand, by way of Supplement to the former.

THE *Wise Men of Gotham*, cum *Appendice*. This is a Treatise of immense Erudition, being the great original and Fountain of those Arguments, bandy- dyed.

dyed about both in *France* and *England*, for a just Defence of the *Moderns* Learning and Wit, against the Presumption, the Pride, and the Ignorance of the *Ancients*. This unknown Author hath so exhausted the Subject, that a penetrating Reader will easily discover whatever hath been written since upon that Dispute, to be little more than Repetition.

* An Abstract of this Treatise hath been lately published by a *worthy Member* of our Society.

THESE Notices may serve to give the learned Reader an Idea, as well as a Taste, of what the whole Work is likely to produce; wherein I have now altogether circumscribed my Thoughts and my Studies; and if I can bring it to a Perfection before I die, shall reckon I have well employed the † poor Remains of an unfortunate Life. This, indeed, is more than I can justly expect from a Quill worn to the Pith in the Service of the State, in *Pro's* and *Con's* upon *Popish Plots* and † *Meal-Tubs*, and *Exclusion Bills*, and *Passive Obedience*, and *Addresses of Lives and Fortunes*; and *Prerogative* and *Property*, and *Liberty of Conscience*, and *Letters to a Friend*; from an Understanding, and a Conscience, thread-bare and ragged with perpetual Turning; from a Head broken in an hundred Places, by the Malignants of the opposite Factions; and from a Body spent with Poxes ill cured, by trusting to Bawds and Surgeons, who (as it afterwards appeared) were professed Enemies to Me and the Government, and revenged their Party's Quarrel upon my

* This I suppose to be understood of Mr. Wotton's Discourse of antient and modern Learning.

† Here the Author seems to personate L'Estrange, Dryden, and some others, who after having passed their Lives in Vice, Faction and Falshood, have the Impudence to talk of Merit, and Innocence, and Sufferings.

‡ In King Charles the Second's Time, there was an Account of a Presbyterian Plot, found in a Tub, which then made much Noise.

my Nose and Shins. Fourſcore and Eleven Pamphlets have I written under Three Reigns, and for the Service of Six and Thirty Factions. But finding the State hath no farther Occaſion for me and my Ink, I retire willingly to draw it out into Speculations more becoming a Philoſopher, having, to my unſpeakable Comfort, paſſed a long Life, with a Conſcience void of Offence.

BUT to return. I am aſſured, from the Reader's Candor, that the brief Specimen I have given will eaſily clear all the reſt of our Society's Productions from an Aſperſion, grown, as it is manifeſt, out of Envy and Ignorance: That they are of little farther Uſe or Value to Mankind, beyond the common Entertainments of their Wit and their Stile: For theſe, I am ſure, have never yet been diſputed by our keenest Adverſaries: In both which, as well as the more profound and myſtical Part, I have throughout this Treatiſe cloſely followed the moſt applauded Originals. And to render all compleat, I have with much Thought and Application of Mind, ſo ordered, that the chief Title prefixed to it, (I mean That under which I deſign it ſhall paſs in the common Converſations of Court and Town) is modelled exactly after the Manner peculiar to *Our Society*.

I CONFESS to have been ſomewhat liberal in the Buſineſs of * Titles, having obſerved the Humour of multiplying them to bear great Vogue among certain Writers, whom I exceedingly reverence. And, indeed, it ſeemeth not unreaſonable, that Books, the Children of the Brain, ſhould have the Honour to be chriſtened with Variety of Names, as well as other Infants of Quality. Our famous *Dryden* has ventured to proceed a Point farther, endeavouring

C

* The Title Page in the Original was ſo torn, that it was not poſſible to recover ſeveral Titles which the Author here ſpeaks of.

endeavouring to introduce also a Multiplicity of † *God-fathers*; which is an Improvement of much more Advantage, upon a very obvious Account.

† *See Virgil translated, &c.*
 It is a Pity this admirable Invention hath not been better cultivated, so as to grow by this Time into general Imitation, when such an Authority serveth it for a Precedent. Nor have my Endeavours been wanting to second so useful an Example: But, it seems, there is an unhappy Expence usually annexed to the calling of a God-father, which was clearly out of my Head, as it is very reasonable to believe. Where the Pinch lay, I cannot certainly affirm; but having employed a World of Thoughts and Pains, to split my Treatise into Forty Sections, and having entreated Forty Lords of my Acquaintance, that they would do me the Honour to stand; they all made it a Matter of Conscience, and sent me their Excuses.

S E C T.

SECTION II.

ONCE upon a Time there was a Man who had Three * Sons by one Wife, and all at a Birth, neither could the Midwife tell certainly which was the Eldest. Their Father died while they were young; and upon his Death-Bed, calling the Lads to him, spoke thus:

SONS, because I have purchased no Estate, nor was born to any, I have long considered of some good Legacies to bequeath you; and at last, with much Care as well as Expence, have provided each of you (here they are) a new † Coat. Now, you are to understand, that these Coats have two Virtues contained in them: One is, that with good wearing, they will last you fresh and sound as long as you live: The other is, that they will grow in the same Proportion with your Bodies, lengthening and widening of themselves, so as to be always fit. Here, let me see them on you before I die. So, very well! Pray, Children, wear them clean, and brush them often. You will find in my ‡ Will (here it is) full Instructions in every Particular concerning the Wearing and Management of your Coats; wherein you must be very exact, to avoid the Penalties I have appointed for every Transgression or Neglect, upon which your future Fortunes will entirely depend. I have also commanded in my Will, that you should live together in

C 2

* By these three Sons, Peter, Martin, and Jack, Popery, the Church of England, and our Protestants Dissenters are designed. W. Wotton.

† By his Coats which he gave his Sons, the Garments of the Israelites. W. Wotton.

‡ An Error (with Submission) of the learned Commentator; for by the Coats are meant the Doctrine and Faith of Christianity, by the Wisdom of the Divine Founder fitted to all Times, Places and Circumstances.

Lambin.

‡ The New Testament.

one House like Brethren and Friends, for then you will be sure to thrive, and not otherwise.

HERE the Story says, this good Father died, and the Three Sons went all together to seek their Fortunes.

I SHALL not trouble you with recounting what Adventures they met for the first seven Years, any further than by taking Notice, that they carefully observed their Father's Will, and kept their Coats in very good Order; that they travelled through several Countries, encountered a reasonable Quantity of Giants, and slew certain Dragons.

BEING now arrived at the proper Age for producing themselves, they came up to Town, and fell in Love with the Ladies, but especially Three, who about that Time were in chief Reputation: The * *Dutchess d'Argent*, *Madame de Grands Titres*, and the *Countess de Orgueil*. On their first Appearance, our three Adventurers met with a very bad Reception; and soon with great Sagacity guessing out the Reason, they quickly began to improve in the good Qualities of the Town: They Writ, and Rallied, and Rhimed, and Sung, and Said, and said Nothing: They Drank, and Fought, and Whored, and Slept, and Swore, and took Snuff: They went to new Plays on the first Night, haunted the Chocolate-Houses, beat the Watch, lay on Bulks, and got Claps: They bilked Hackney-Coachmen, ran in Debt with Shop-keepers, and lay with their Wives: They killed Bailiffs, kicked Fiddlers down Stairs, eat at *Locket's*, loitered at *Will's*: They talked of the Drawing-Room, and never came there: Dined with Lords they never saw: Whis-
pered

* *Their Mistresses are the Dutchess d'Argent, Mademoiselle de Grands Titres, and the Countess de Orgueil, i. e. Covetousness, Ambition and Pride, which were the three great Vices that the ancient Fathers inveighed against, as the first Corruptions of Christianity.* W. Wotton.

pered a Dutchess, and spoke never a Word: Exposed the Scrawls of their Laundress for Billet-doux of Quality: Came ever just from Court, and were never seen in it: Attended the Levee *sub dio*: Got a List of Peers by Heart in one Company, and with great Familiarity retailed them in another. Above all, they constantly attended those Committees of Senators who are silent in the *House*, and loud in the *Coffee-house*, where they nightly adjourn to chew the Cud of Politicks, and are encompassed with a Ring of Disciples, who lye in wait to catch up their Droppings. The Three Brothers had acquired forty other Qualifications of the like Stamp, too tedious to recount; and, by consequence, were justly reckoned the most accomplished Persons in the Town: But all would not suffice, and the Ladies aforesaid continued still inflexible: To clear up which Difficulty, I must with the Reader's good Leave and Patience have Recourse to some Points of Weight, which the Authors of that Age have not sufficiently illustrated.

FOR * about this Time it happened a Sect arose, whose Tenets obtained and spread very far, especially in the *Grand Monde*, and among every Body of good Fashion. They worshipped a Sort of † *Idol*, who, as their Doctrine delivered, did daily create Men, by a kind of Manufactory Operation. This *Idol* they placed in the highest Parts of the House, on an Altar erected about three Foot: He was shewn in the Posture of a *Persian* Emperor, sitting on a *Superficies*, with his Legs interwoven under him. This God had a *Goose* for his Ensign; whence it is that some learned Men pretend to deduce his Original from *Jupiter Capitolinus*. At his left Hand, beneath the Altar, *Hell* seemed to open, and catch at the Animals the *Idol* was creating; to prevent

C 3

which,

* This is an occasional Satyr upon Dress and Fashion, in order to introduce what follows.

† By this *Idol* is meant a Taylor.

which, certain of his Priests hourly flung in Pieces of the uninformed Mass of Substance, and sometimes whole Limbs already enlivened, which that horrid Gulph insatiably swallowed, terrible to behold. The *Goose* was also held a subaltern Divinity, or *Deus minorum Gentium*, before whose Shrine was sacrificed that Creature, whose hourly Food is human Gore, and who is in so great Renown abroad, for being the Delight and Favourite of the * *Ægyptian Cercopithecus*. Millions of these Animals were cruelly slaughtered every Day, to appease the Hunger of that consuming Deity. The chief *Idol* was also worshipped, as the Inventor of the *Yard* and the *Needle*; whether as the God of Seamen, or on Account of certain other mystical Attributes, hath not been sufficiently cleared.

THE Worshippers of this Deity had also a System of their Belief, which seemed to turn upon the following Fundamental: They held the Universe to be a large *Suit of Cloaths*, which *investeth* every Thing: That the Earth is *invested* by the Air; the Air is *invested* by the Stars; and the Stars are *invested* by the *Primum Mobile*. Look on this Globe of Earth, you will find it to be a very compleat and fashionable *Dress*. What is that which some call *Land*, but a fine Coat faced with Green? or the Sea, but a Waistcoat of Water-Tabby? Proceed to the particular Works of the Creation, you will find how curious a *Journeyman* Nature hath been, to trim up the *vegetable* Beaux: Observe how sparkish a *Periwig* adorns the Head of a *Beech*, and what a fine Doublet of white Satin is worn by the *Birch*. To conclude from all, what is Man himself but a † *Micro-Coat*, or rather a compleat Suit of Cloaths with

* The *Ægyptians* worshipped a *Monkey*, which Animal is very fond of eating Lice, stiled here *Creatures that feed on Human Gore*.

† Alluding to the Word *Microcosm*, or a little World, as Man hath been called by *Philosophers*.

with all its Trimmings? As to his Body, there can be no Dispute; but examine even the Acquirements of his Mind, you will find them all contribute, in their Order, towards furnishing out an exact Dress: To instance no more; is not Religion a *Cloak*, Honesty a *Pair of Shoes*, worn out in the Dirt, Self-love a *Surtout*, Vanity a *Shirt*, and Conscience a *Pair of Breeches*, which, although a Cover for Lewdness as well as Nastiness, is easily slipped down for the Service of both?

THE *Postulata* being admitted, it will follow in due Course of Reasoning, that those Beings which the World calleth improperly *Suits of Cloaths*, are in reality the most refined Species of Animals; or, to proceed higher, that they are rational Creatures, or Men. For, is it not manifest, that they live, and move, and talk, and perform all other Offices of Human Life? Are not Beauty, and Wit, and Mien, and Breeding, their inseparable Proprieties? In short, we see nothing but them, hear nothing but them. Is it not they who walk the Streets, fill up *Parliament*---, *Coffee*---, *Play*---, *Bawdy-Houses*? It is true, indeed, that these Animals, which are vulgarly called *Suits of Cloaths*, or *Dresses*, do according to certain Compositions receive different Appellations. If one of them be trimmed up with a Gold Chain, and a red Gown, and a white Rod, and a great Horse, it is called a *Lord-Mayor*; if certain Ermins and Furs be placed in a certain Position, we stile them a *Judge*, and so, an apt Conjunction of Lawn and black Sattin, we intitle a *Bishop*.

OTHERS of these Professors, although agreeing in the main System, were yet more refined upon certain Branches of it; and held that Man was an Animal compounded of two *Dresses*, the *Natural* and the *Celestial Suit*, which were the Body and the Soul: That the Soul was the outward, and the Body the inward Cloathing; that the latter was *ex traduce*; but the former of daily Creation and Circumfusion.

Circumfufion. This laft they proved by Scripture ; becaufe, *in them we Live, and Move, and have our Being* : As likewife by Philofophy, becaufe they are *All in All, and All in every Part*. Befides, faid they, feparate thefe two, and you will find the Body to be only a fenfelefs unfavoury Carcafs. By all which it is manifef, that the outward Drefs muft needs be the Soul.

To this System of Religion were tagged feveral fubaltern Doctrines, which were entertained with great Vogue : As particularly, the Faculties of the Mind were deduced by the Learned among them in this Manner : *Embroidery was Sheerwit ; Gold Fringe was agreeable Converfation ; Gold Lace was Repartee ; a huge long Perruwig was Humour, and a Coat full of Powder was very good Raillery* : All which required Abundance of *Fineffe and Delicatelte* to manage with Advantage, as well as a ftrict Obfervance after Times and Fafhions.

I HAVE with much Pains and Reading collected, out of ancient Authors, this fhort Summary of a Body of Philofophy and Divinity, which feemeth to have been compofed by a Vein and Race of Thinking, very different from any other Systems, either *Ancient or Modern*. And it was not merely to entertain or fatisfy the Reader's Curiofity, but rather to give him Light into feveral Circumftances of the following Story : That, knowing the State of Difpofitions and Opinions in an Age fo remote, he may better comprehend thofe great Events which were the Ifue of them. I advife therefore the courteous Reader, to perufe with a World of Application, again and again, whatever I have written upon this Matter. And leaving thefe broken Ends, I carefully gather up the chief Thread of my Story, and proceed :

THESE

THESE Opinions therefore were so universal, as well as the Practices of them, among the refined Part of Court and Town, that our three Brother-Adventurers, as their Circumstances then stood, were strangely at a Loss. For on the one Side, the three Ladies they addressed themselves to, (whom we have named already) were ever at the very Top of the Fashion, and abhorred all that were below it, but the Breadth of a Hair. On the other Side, their Father's Will was very precise, and it was the main Precept in it, with the greatest Penalties annexed, not to add to, or diminish from their Coats, one Thread, without a positive Command in the Will. Now, the Coats their Father had left them were, it is true, of very good Cloth, and besides, so neatly sewn, you would swear they were all of a Piece, but, at the same Time, very plain, and with little or no Ornament; and it happened, that before they were a Month in Town, great * *Shoulder-knots*

The first Part of the Tale is the History of Peter; thereby Popery is exposed: Every Body knows the Papists have made great Additions to Christianity; that indeed is the great Exception which the Church of England makes against them, accordingly Peter begins his Pranks, with adding a Shoulder-knot to his Coat.
W. Wotton.

His Description of the Cloth of which the Coat was made, has a farther Meaning than the Words may seem to import. "The Coats their Father had left them were of very good Cloth, and besides so neatly sewn, you would swear it had been all of a Piece, but at the same time very plain, with little or no Ornament." This is the distinguishing Character of the Christian Religion. Christiana Religio absoluta & simplex, was Ammianus Marcellinus's Description of it, who was himself a Heathen. W. Wotton.

* By this is understood the first introducing of Pageantry, and unnecessary Ornaments in the Church, such

der-knots came up; strait, all the World was *Shoul-der-knots*; no approaching the Ladies *Ruelles* without the *Quota* of *Shoulder-knots*: *That Fellow*, cries one, *has no Soul*; *where is his Shoulder-knot*? Our three Brethren soon discovered their Want, by sad Experience, meeting in their Walks with forty Mortifications and Indignities. If they went to the *Play-house*, the Door-keeper shewed them into the *Twelve-penny Gallery*. If they called a Boat, says a Waterman, *I am first Sculler*: If they stept to the *Rose* to take a Bottle, the Drawer would cry, *Friend, we sell no Ale*. If they went to visit a Lady, a Footman met them at the Door with, *Pray send up your Message*. In this unhappy Case, they went immediately to consult their Father's Will, read it over and over, but not a Word of the *Shoulder-knot*. What should they do? What Temper should they find? Obedience was absolutely necessary, and yet *Shoulder-knots* appeared extremely requisite. After much Thought, one of the Brothers, who happened to be more *Book-learned* than the other two, said he had found an Expedient. *It is true*, said he, *there is nothing here in this Will**, totidem verbis, *making mention of Shoulder-knots, but I dare conjecture, we may find them inclusive, or totidem syllabis*. This Distinction was immediately approved by all; and so they fell again to examine the Will. But their evil Star had so directed the Matter, that the first Syllable was not to be found

in
as were neither for Convenience nor Edification, as a *Shoulder-knot*, in which there is neither Symmetry nor Use.

* When the Papists cannot find any thing which they want in Scripture, they go to Oral Tradition; thus Peter is introduced satisfied with the tedious Way of looking for all the Letters of any Word, which he has occasion for in the Will, when neither the constituent Syllables, nor much less the whole Word, were there in Terminis. W. Wotton.

Shoul-
with-
cries
Our
y sad
forty
nt to
into
Boat,
ept to
cry,
ady,
nd up
went
ead it
lder-
ould
, and
isite.
who
other
true,
idem
dare
idem
ap-
mine
d the
und
in
as a
y nor
they
thus
ay of
e has
ituent
re in



in th
ment
Hear
altho
iden
ertio
was a
once
S, H,
Enen
that
Diffie
whom
Hanc
that
to th
in an
in *
with
best
And
Mist
but t
it sho
Diffie
ly ou
swag
best.
Bu
ratio
whic
their
Decl
with
actly
Mont
up i

*
†

in the whole Writing. Upon which Disappointment, he, who found the former Evasion, took Heart, and said, *Brothers, there is yet Hopes; for, although we cannot find them totidem verbis, nor totidem syllabis, I dare engage we shall make them out tertio modo, or totidem literis.* This Discovery was also highly commended, upon which they fell once more to the Scrutiny, and picked out S, H, O, U, L, D, E, R; when the same Planet, Enemy to their Repose, had wonderfully contrived, that a K was not to be found. Here was a weighty Difficulty! But the distinguishing Brother (for whom we shall hereafter find a Name) now his Hand was in, proved by a very good Argument, that K was a modern illegitimate Letter, unknown to the learned Ages, nor any where to be found in ancient Manuscripts, *Calenda* hath in * Q. K. C. been sometimes writ * *Quibusdam* with a K, but erroneously, for in the *Veteribus* Co-dest Copies it is ever spelt with a C. *dicibus* And by Consequence it was a gross Mistake in our Language to spell *Knot* with a K, but that, from henceforward, he would take Care it should be writ with a C; upon this, all farther Difficulty vanished; *Shoulder-knots* were made clearly out to be *Jure Paterno*, and our three Gentlemen swaggered with as large and as flanting ones as the best.

BUT, as human Happiness is of a very short Duration, so in those Days were human Fashions, upon which it entirely dependeth. *Shoulder-knots* had their Time, and we must now imagine them in their Decline; for a certain Lord came just from *Paris*, with fifty Yards of *Gold-Lace* upon his Coat, exactly trimmed after the Court-Fashion of that Month. In two Days, all Mankind appeared closed up in Bars of † *Gold-Lace*: Whoever durst peep abroad

* *Some ancient Manuscripts.*

† *I cannot tell whether the Author means any new Innovation*

abroad without his Complement of *Gold-Lace*, was as scandalous as a ----; and as ill received among the Women. What should our Three Knights do in this momentous Affair? They had sufficiently strained a Point already, in the Affair of *Shoulder-knots*: Upon Recourse to the Will, nothing appeared there but *altum silentium*. That of the *Shoulder-knots* was a loose, flying, circumstantial Point; but this of *Gold-Lace* seemed too considerable an Alteration without better Warrant; it did *aliquo modo essentia adherere*, and therefore required a positive Precept. But about this Time, it fell out that the learned Brother aforesaid had read *Aristotelis Dialectica*, and especially that wonderful Piece de *Interpretatione*, which has the Faculty of teaching its Readers to find out a Meaning in every Thing but itself; like Commentators on the *Revelations*, who proceed Prophets without understanding a Syllable of the Text. Brothers, said he, * *You are to be informed, that of Wills duo sunt Genera, † Nuncupatory and Scriptory: That in the Scriptory Will here before us, there is no Precept or Mention about Gold-lace, conceditur: But, si idem affirmetur de nuncupatorio, negatur; for, Brothers, if you remember, we heard a Fellow say when we were Boys, that he heard my Father's Man say, that he heard my Father say, that he would advise his Sons to get Gold-Lace on their Coats, as soon as ever they could procure Money to buy it. By G--- that is very true*, cries the other; *I remember it perfectly well*, said the Third. And so without

Innovation by this Word, or whether it be only to introduce the new Methods of forcing and perverting Scripture.

* The next Subject of our Author's Wit, is the Glosses and Interpretations of Scripture, very many absurd ones of which are allowed in the most authentick Books of the Church of Rome. W. Wotton.

† By this is meant Tradition, allowed to have equal Authority with the Scripture, or rather greater.

without more ado they got the largest Gold-Lace in the Parish, and walked about as fine as Lords.

A while after, there came up all in Fashion, a pretty Sort of * Flame-coloured Sattin for Linings, and the Mercer brought a Pattern of it immediately to our Three Gentlemen; *An't please your Worships* (said he) † *My Lord C---*, and Sir J. W. *had Linings out of this very Piece last Night; it takes wonderfully, and I shall not have a Remnant left, enough to make my Wife a Pin-cushion by To-morrow at Ten o'Clock.* Upon this, they fell again to rumage the Will, because the present Case also required a positive Precept, the Lining being held by orthodox Writers to be of the Essence of the Coat. After long Search, they could fix upon nothing to the Matter in hand, except a short Advice of their Father's in the Will, ‡ *to take Care of Fire, and put out out their Candles*.

¶ *before*

* *This is Purgatory, whereof he speaks more particularly hereafter, but here only to shew how Scripture was perverted to prove it, which was done by giving equal Authority with the Canon to Apocrypha, called here a Codicil annexed.*

It is likely the Author, in every one of these Changes in the Brother's Dresses, refers to some particular Error in the Church of Rome; although it is not easy, I think, to apply them all; but by this of Flame-coloured Sattin is manifestly intended Purgatory; by Gold-Lace may perhaps be understood, the lofty Ornaments and Plate in the Churches. The Shoulder-knots and Silver Fringe are not so obvious, at least to me; but the Indian Figures of Men, Women, and Children, plainly relate to the Pictures in the Romish Churches, of God like an old Man, of the Virgin Mary, and our Saviour as a Child.

† *This shews the Time the Author writ, it being about Fourteen Years since those two Persons were reckoned the fine Gentlemen of the Town.*

‡ *That is, to take care of Hell; and, in order to do that, to subdue and extinguish their Lusts.*

before they went to sleep. This, although a good deal for the Purpose, and helping very far towards Self-Conviction, yet not seeming wholly of Force to establish a Command; and being resolved to avoid farther Scruple, as well as future Occasion for Scandal, says He that was the Scholar; *I remember to have read in Wills, of a Codicil annexed, which is indeed a Part of the Will, and what it contains bath equal Authority with the rest.* Now, I have been considering of this same Will here before us, and I cannot reckon it to be compleat for want of such a Codicil. I will therefore fasten one in its proper Place very dexterously; I have had it by me some time; it was written by a † Dog-keeper of my Grandfather's, and talks a great deal (as good Luck would have it) of this very Flame-coloured Sattin. The Project was immediately approved by the other Two; an old Parchment Scroll was tagged on according to Art, in the Form of a Codicil annexed, and the Sattin bought and worn.

NEXT Winter, a Player, hired for the Purpose by the Corporation of *Fringe-makers*, acted his Part in a new Comedy, all covered with † *Silver-Fringe*, and according to the laudable Custom, gave Rise to that Fashion. Upon which the Brothers consulting the Father's Will; to their great Astonishment found these Words; *Item, I charge and command my said Three Sons, to wear no sort of Silver-Fringe upon or about their said Coats, &c.* with a Penalty in case of Disobedience, too long here to insert. However, after some Pause, the Brother so often mentioned for his Erudition, who was well skilled in Criticisms, had found in a certain Author, which he said should be nameless, that the same Word, which in the Will is called *Fringe*, doth also signify a *Broomstick*; and doubtless ought to have the same Interpretation in this

† I believe this refers to that Part of the Apocrypha, where mention is made of Tobit and his Dog.

‡ This is certainly the farther introducing the Pomp of Habit and Ornament,

this Paragraph. This another of the Brothers disliked, because of that Epithet *Silver*, which could not, he humbly conceived, in Propriety of Speech, be reasonably applied to a *Broomstick*: But it was replied upon him, that this Epithet was understood in a *Mythological* and *Allegorical* Sense. However, he objected again, why their Father should forbid them to wear a *Broomstick* on their Coats, a Caution that seemed unnatural and impertinent: Upon which, he was taken up short, as one that spoke irreverently of a *Mystery*, which doubtless was very useful and significant, but ought not to be over curiously pryed into, or nicely reasoned upon. And in short, their Father's Authority being now considerably sunk, this Expedient was allowed to serve as a lawful Dispenfation, for wearing their full Proportion of *Silver-Fringe*.

A WHILE after was revived an old Fashion, long antiquated, of *Embroidery*, with * *Indian Figures* of Men, Women, and Children. Here they remembered but too well, how their Father had always abhorred this Fashion; that he made several Paragraphs on Purpose, importing his utter Detestation of it, and bestowing his everlasting Curse to his Sons whenever they should wear it. For all this, in a few Days, they appeared higher in the Fashion than any Body else in the Town. But they solved the Matter by saying, that these Figures were not at all the same with those that were formerly worn, and were meant in the Will. Besides, they did not wear them in that Sense, as forbidden by their Father, but as they were a commendable Custom, and of great Use to the Publick. That these rigorous Clauses in the Will did therefore require some Allowance,

* *The Images of Saints, the blessed Virgin, and our Saviour an Infant.*

Ibid. Images in the Church of Rome give him but too fair a Handle. The Brothers remembered, &c. The Allegory here is direct. W. Wotton.

lowance, and a favourable Interpretation, and ought to be understood *cum grano Salis*.

BUT, Fashions perpetually altering in that Age, the Scholastick Brother grew weary of searching farther Evasions, and solving everlasting Contradictions. Resolved therefore at all Hazards to comply with the Modes of the World, they concerted Matters together, and agreed unanimously to * lock up their Father's Will in a *Strong Box*, brought out of *Greece* or *Italy* (I have forgot which) and trouble themselves no farther to examine it, but only refer to its Authority whenever they thought fit. In Consequence whereof, a while after, it grew a general Mode to wear an infinite Number of *Points*, most of them tagged with *Silver*: Upon which the Scholar pronounced † *ex Cathedra*, that *Points* were absolutely *Jure Paterno*, as they might very well remember. It is true indeed, the Fashion prescribed somewhat more than was directly named in the Will; however, that they, as Heirs general of their Father, had Power to make and add certain Clauses for publick Emolument, though not deducible *totidem verbis*, from the Letter of the Will,

The *Papists* formerly forbid the People the Use of Scripture in a *Vulgar Tongue*; Peter therefore locks up his Father's Will in a *strong Box*, brought out of *Greece* or *Italy*. Those Countries are named, because the New Testament is written in *Greek*; and the *Vulgar Latin*, which is the authentick Edition of the Bible in the Church of *Rome*, as in the Language of old *Italy*. W. Wotton.

† The *Popes*, in their *Decretals* and *Bulls*, have given their Sanction to many very gainful Doctrines, which are now received in the Church of *Rome*, that are not mentioned in Scripture, and are unknown to the *Primitive Church*. Peter accordingly pronounces, *ex Cathedra*, That *Points* tagged with *Silver* were absolutely *Jure Paterno*, and so they wore them in great Numbers. W. Wotton.

Will, or else, *Multa absurda sequerentur*. This was understood for *Cannical*, and therefore on the following Sunday they came to Church all covered with Points.

THE learned Brother, so often mentioned, was reckoned the best Scholar in all that or the next Street to it; infomuch as, having run something behind-hand with the World, he obtained the Favour from a certain Lord, to receive him into his House, and to teach his Children. A while after, the Lord died, and he, by long Practice of his Father's Will, found the Way of contriving a Deed of Conveyance of that House to himself and his Heirs; upon which he took Possession, turned the young Squires out, and received his Brothers in their Stead.

† This was Constantine the Great, from whom the Popes pretend a Donation of St. Peter's Patrimony, which they have never been able to produce.

Ibid. The Bishops of Rome enjoyed their Privileges in Rome at first by Favour of the Emperors, whom at last they shut out of their own Capital City, and then forged a Donation from Constantine the Great, the better to justify what they did. In Imitation of this, Peter, having run something behind-hand in the World, obtained Leave of a certain Lord, &c.

W. Wotton.

S E C T. III.

A DIGRESSION concerning CRITICKS.

ALTHOUGH I have been hitherto as cautious as I could, upon all Occasions, most nicely to follow the Rules and Methods of Writing laid down by the Example of our illustrious *Moderns*; yet has the unhappy Shortness of my Memory led me into an Error, from which I must immediately extricate myself, before I can decently pursue my principal Subject. I confess with Shame, it was an unpardonable Omission to proceed so far as I have already done, before I had performed the due Discourses, Expostulatory, Supplicatory, or Deprecatory, with my good *Lords the Criticks*. Towards some Atone-ment for this grievous Neglect, I do here make humbly bold to present them with a short Account of themselves and their *Art*, by looking into the Original and Pedigree of the Word, as it is generally understood among us, and very briefly considering the antient and present State thereof.

By the Word *Critick*, at this Day so frequent in all Conversations, there have sometimes been distinguished Three very different Species of mortal Men, according as I have read in *ancient Books* and *Pamphlets*. For, first, by this Term was understood such Persons as invented or drew up Rules for themselves and the World; by observing which, a careful Reader might be able to pronounce upon the Productions of the *Learned*, form his Taste to a true Relish of the *Sublime* and the *Admirable*; and divide every Beauty of Matter or of Stile from the Corruption that apeth it: In their common Perusal of Books, singling out the Errors and Defects, the Nauseous, the Fulsome, the Dull, and the Imper-
 tinent, with the Caution of a Man that walks through *Edinburgh* Streets in a Morning, who is indeed as careful as he can to watch diligently, and

spy

spy out the Filth in his Way; not that he is curious to observe the Colour and Complexion of the Ordure, or take its Dimensions, much less to be paddling in, or tasting it; but only with a Design to come out as cleanly as he may. These Men seem, although very erroneously, to have understood the Appellation of *Critick* in a literal Sense; that one principal Part of his Office was to Praise and Acquit; and, that a *Critick*, who setteth up to read, only for an Occasion of Censure and Reproof, is a Creature as barbarous as a *Judge*, who should take up a Resolution to hang all Men that came before him upon a Trial.

AGAIN; by the Word *Critick* have been meant, the Restorers of antient Learning, from the Worms, and Graves, and Dust of Manuscripts.

Now, the Races of these two have been for some Ages utterly extinct; and, besides, to discourse any farther of them would not be at all to my Purpose.

THE Third, and Noblest Sort, is that of the *TRUE CRITICK*, whose Original is the most ancient of all. Every *True Critick* is a Hero born, descending in a direct Line from a Celestial Stem, by *Momus* and *Hybris*, who begat *Zoilus*, who begat *Pigellius*, who begat *Etcatera* the Elder, who begat *Bently*, and *Rymer*, and *Wotton*, and *Perrault*, and *Dennis*, who begat *Etcatera* the Younger.

AND these are the *Criticks*, from whom the Commonwealth of Learning hath in all Ages received such immense Benefits, that the Gratitude of their Admirers placed their Origin in Heaven, among those of *Hercules*, *Theseus*, *Perseus*, and other great Deservers of Mankind. But Heroick Virtue itself hath not been exempt from the Obloquy of evil Tongues. For it hath been objected, that those ancient Heroes, famous for their combating so many Giants, and Dragons, and Robbers, were in their own Persons a greater Nuisance to Mankind, than any of those Monsters they subdued; and therefore, to render their Obligations more complete,

pleat, when all *other* Vermin were destroyed, should in Conscience have concluded with the same Justice upon themselves; *Hercules* most generously did; and hath, upon that Score, procured to himself more Temples and Votaries than the best of his Fellows. For these Reasons, I suppose it is why some have conceived, it would be very expedient for the publick Good of Learning, that every *True Critick*, as soon as he had finished his Task assigned, should immediately deliver himself up to Ratsbane or Hemp, or from some convenient *Altitude*, and that no Man's Pretensions to so illustrious a Character should by any means be received, before that Operation were performed.

Now, from this Heavenly Descent of *Criticisim*, and the close Analogy it bears to *Heroick Virtue*, it is easy to assign the proper Employment of a *True Ancient Genuine Critick*; which is, to travel through this vast World of Writings; to pursue and hunt those monstrous Faults bred within them; to drag out the lurking Errors like *Cacus* from his Den; to multiply them like *Hydra's* Heads; and rake them together like *Augus's* Dung; or else drive away a Sort of *dangerous Fowl*, who have a perverse Inclination to plunder the best Branches of the *Tree of Knowledge*, like those *Stymphalian* Birds that eat up the Fruit.

THESE Reasonings will furnish us with an adequate Definition of a *true Critick*; that he is a *Discoverer and Collector of Writers Faults*. Which may be farther put beyond Dispute by the following Demonstration: That whoever will examine the Writings in all Kinds, wherewith this antient Sect hath honoured the World, shall immediately find, from the whole Thread and Tenour of them, that the Ideas of the Authors have been altogether conversant, and taken up with the Faults, and Blemishes, and Oversight, and Mistakes of other Writers; and let the Subject treated on be whatever it will, their Imaginations are so entirely possessed and re-

plete

plete with the Defects of other Pens, that the very Quintessence of what is bad, doth of Necessity distil into their own; by which means the whole appeareth to be nothing else but an *Abstract* of the *Criticisms* themselves have made.

HAVING thus briefly considered the Original and Office of a *Critick*, as the Word is understood in its most noble and universal Acceptation, I proceed to refute the Objections of those who argue from the Silence and Pretermision of Authors; by which they pretend to prove, that the very Art of *Criticism*, as now exercised, and by me explained, is wholly *Modern*; and consequently, that the *Criticks* of *Great Britain* and *France* have no Title to an Original so Antient and Illustrious as I have deduced. Now, if I can clearly make out the contrary, that the most antient Writers have particularly described, both the Person and the Office of a *true Critick*, agreeable to the Definition laid down by me; their grand Objection, from the Silence of Authors, will fall to the Ground.

I CONFESS to have, for a long Time, borne a Part in this general Error; from which I should never have acquitted myself, but through the Assistance of our Noble *Moderns*; whose most edifying Volumes I turn indefatigably over Night and Day, for the Improvement of my Mind, and the Good of my Country: These have with unwearied Pains made many useful Searches into the weak Sides of the *Antients*, and given us a comprehensive List of them. * Besides, they have * *See* Wot-proved beyond Contradiction, that the ton of *Antient* very finest Things delivered of old, *ient and Modern* have been long since invented, and *Learn* brought to Light by much later Pens; *ing*. and that the noblest Discoveries those *Antients* ever made, of Art or of Nature, have all been produced by the transcending Genius of the present Age. Which clearly shews, how little Merit those *Antients* can justly pretend to; and takes off that

that blind Admiration paid them by Men in a Corner, who have the Unhappiness of conversing too little with *present Things*. Reflecting maturely upon all this, and taking in the whole Compass of Human Nature, I easily concluded, that these *Antients*, highly sensible of their many Imperfections, must needs have endeavoured from some Passages in their Works, to obviate, soften, or divert the censorious Reader, by *Satyr*, or *Panegyrick* upon the *true Criticks*, in Imitation of their *Masters the Moderns*.

Now, in the *Common-Places* of * *Satyr* and * both these, I was plentifully instructed, by a long Course of useful Studies upon *Criticks*. in *Prefaces* and *Prologues*; and therefore immediately resolved to try what I could discover of either, by a diligent Perusal of the most ancient Writers, and especially those who treated of the earliest Times. Here I found to my great Surprise, that although they all entered, upon Occasion, into particular Descriptions of the *true Critick*, according as they were governed by their Fears or their Hopes; yet whatever they touched of that kind was with Abundance of Caution, adventuring no farther than *Mythology* and *Hieroglyphick*. This, I suppose, gave Ground to superficial Readers, for urging the Silence of Authors, against the Antiquity of the *true Critick*; although the *Types* are so apposite, and the Applications so necessary and natural, that it is not easy to conceive, how any Reader of a *modern Eye* and *Taste* could overlook them, I shall venture from a great Number to produce a few, which, I am very confident, will put this Question beyond Dispute.

It well deserves considering, that these *ancient Writers*, in treating Enigmatically upon the Subject, have generally fixed upon the very *same Hieroglyph*, varying only the Story according to their Affections or their Wit. For, first, *Pausanias* is of Opinion, that the Perfection of Writing correct, was entirely owing to the Institution of *Criticks*; and, that he

can

can possibly mean no other than the *True Critick*, is, I think, manifest enough from the following Description. He says, *They were a Race of Men, who delighted to nibble at the Superfluities and Excrescencies of Books; which the Learned at length observing, took Warning of their own Accord, to lop the Luxuriant, the Rotten, the Dead, the Sapless, and the Overgrown Branches from their Works.* But, now, all this he cunningly shades under the following Allegory, *That the * Nauplians * Lib. --- in Argia learned the Art of Pruning their Vines, by observing, that when an Ass had browsed upon one of them, it thrived the better, and bore fairer Fruit. But † Herodotus holding the very † Lib. 4. same Hieroglyph, speaks much plainer, and almost in Terminis. He hath been so bold as to tax the true Criticks of Ignorance and Malice; telling us openly, for I think nothing can be plainer, that in the Western Part of Libya, there were ASSES with HORNS: Upon which Relation * Ctesias yet refines, mentioning the * Vide every same Animal about India; adding, cerpta ex ea That whereas all other ASSES wanted a apud Pho-Gall, these horned ones were so redundant. ant in that part, that their Flesh was not to be eaten, because of its extream Bitterness.*

Now, the Reason why those antient Writers treated this Subject only by Types and Figures was, because they durst not make open Attacks against a Party so potent and so terrible, as the Criticks of those Ages were; whose very Voice was so dreadful, that a Legion of Authors would tremble, and drop their Pens at the Sound: For so † Herodotus tells us expressly in another † Lib. 4. Place, how a vast Army of Scythians was put to Flight in a pannick Terror by the Braying of an Ass. From hence it is conjectured by certain profound Philologers, that the great Awe and Reverence paid to a *true Critick*, by the Writers of Britain, have been deriyed to us from those our
Scythian

Scythian Ancestors. In short, this Dread was so universal, that in Process of Time, those Authors who had a Mind to publish their Sentiments more freely, in describing the *true Criticks* of their several Ages, were forced to leave off the Use of the former *Hieroglyph*, as too nearly approaching the *Prototype*, and invented other Terms instead thereof that were more cautious and mystical;

* *Lib.* so * *Diodorus* speaking to the same Purpose, ventures no farther than to say, That in the Mountains of Helicon there grows a certain Weed, which bears a Flower of so damned a Scent, as to poison those who offer to smell it. *Lucretius* gives exactly the same Relation.

† *Est etiam in magnis Heliconis montibus arbor, Floris odore hominem tetro consueta necare.* Lib. 6.

BUT *Ctesias*, whom we lately quoted, hath been a great deal bolder: He had been used with much Severity by the *true Criticks* of his own Age, and therefore could not forbear to leave behind him, at least one deep Mark of his Vengeance against the whole Tribe. His Meaning is so near the Surface, that I wonder how it possibly came to be overlooked by those who deny the Antiquity of *true Criticks*. For pretending to make a Description of many strange Animals about *India*, he hath set down these remarkable Words: *Amongst the rest, says he, there is a Serpent that wants Teeth, and consequently cannot bite; but if its Vomit (to which it is much addicted) happens to fall upon any Thing, a certain Rottenness or Corruption ensues; These Serpents are generally found among the Mountains where Jewels grow, and they frequently emit a poisonous Juice, whereof whoever drinks, that Person's Brains fly out of his Nostrils.*

THERE

† *Near Helicon, and round the learned Hill,
Grow Trees, whose Blossoms with their Odour kill.*

THERE was also among the *Antients* a Sort of Critick, not distinguished in *Specie* from the former but in Growth or Degree, who seem to have been only the *Tyros* or *junior* Scholars; yet, because of their different Employments, they are frequently mentioned as a Sect by themselves. The usual Exercise of these younger Students was to attend constantly at Theatres, and learn to spy out the *worst Parts* of the Play, whereof they were obliged carefully to take Notice, and render a rational Account to their Tutors. Fleshed at these smaller Sports, like young wolves, they grew up in Time, to be nimble and strong enough for hunting down large Game. For it hath been observed both among Antients and Moderns, that a *true Critick* hath one Quality in common with a *Whore* and an *Alderman*, never to change his Title or his Nature; that a *Grey Critick* hath been certainly a *Green* one, the Perfections and Acquirements of his Age being only the improved Talents of his Youth; like *Hemp*, which, some Naturalists inform us, is bad for *Suffocations*, although taken but in the Seed. I esteem the Invention, or at least the Refinement of *Prologues*, to have been owing to these younger Proficients, of whom *Terence* maketh frequent and honourable Mention, under the Name of *Malevoli*.

Now, it is certain, the Institution of the *true Criticks* was of absolute Necessity to the Commonwealth of Learning. For all human Actions seem to be divided like *Themistocles* and his Company: One Man can *Fiddle*, and another can make a *small Town* a *great City*, and he that cannot do either one or the other deserveth to be kicked out of the Creation. The avoiding of which Penalty hath doubtless given the first Birth to the Nation of *Criticks*, and, withal, an occasion for their secret Detractors to report; that a *true Critick* is a Sort of Mechanick, set up with a Stock and Tools for his Trade, at as little Expence as a *Taylor*; and that there is much Analogy between the Utensils and

Abilities of both: That the Taylor's *Hell* is the Type of a Critick's *Common-place Book*, and his Wit and Learning held forth by the *Goose*: That it requireth at least as many of these to the making up of one Scholar, as of the others to the Composition of a Man: That the Valour of both is equal, and their *Weapons* near of a Size. Much may be said in Answer to those invidious Reflections; and I can positively affirm the first to be a Falshood: For, on the contrary, nothing is more certain, than that it requireth greater Layings out to be free of the *Criticks* Company, than of any other you can name. For, as to be a *true Beggar*, it will cost the richest Candidate every Groat he is worth; so, before one can commence a *true Critick*, it will cost a Man all the good Qualities of his Mind: which, perhaps, for a less Purchase, would be thought but an indifferent Bargain.

HAVING thus amply proved the Antiquity of *Criticism*, and described the Primitive State of it; I shall now examine the present Condition of this Empire, and shew how well it agrees with its antient self. * A certain Author, whose Works have many Ages since been entirely lost, doth in his fifth Book and eighth Chapter, say of *Criticks*, that *their Writings are the Mirrors of Learning*. This I understand in a literal Sense, and suppose our Author must mean, that whoever designs to be a perfect Writer must inspect into the Books of *Criticks*, and correct his Invention there as in a Mirror. Now, whoever considers, that the *Mirrors* of the Antients were made of *Brass*, and *sine Mercurio*, may presently apply the Two principal Qualifications of a *true modern Critick*, and, consequently, must needs conclude, that these have always been, and must be for ever the same. For, *Brass* is an Emblem of Duration, and, when it is skilfully burnished, will cast

* Quotation after the Manner of a great Author. Vide Bentley's *Dissertation*, &c.

cast *Reflections* from its own *Superficies*, without any Assistance of *Mercury* from behind. All the other Talents of a *Critick* will not require a particular Mention, being included in, or easily reducible to these. However, I shall conclude with three Maxims, which may serve both as Characteristicks to distinguish a *true modern Critick* from a Pretender, and will be also of admirable Use to those worthy Spirits, who engage in so useful and honourable an Art.

THE first is, That *Criticism*, contrary to all other Faculties of the Intellect, is ever held the truest and best, when it is the very *first* Result of the *Critick's* Mind: As Fowlers reckon the first Aim for the surest, and seldom fail of missing the Mark, if they stay not for a second.

SECONDLY; the *true Criticks* are known by their Talent of swarming about the noblest Writers, to which they are carried merely by Instinct, as a Rat to the best Cheese, or a Wasp to the fairest Fruit. So, when the *King* is on Horse-back, he is sure to be the *dirtiest* Person of the Company, and they that make their Court best are such as *bespatter* him most.

LASTLY; a *true Critick*, in the Perusal of a Book, is like a *Dog* at a Feast, whose Thoughts and Stomach are wholly set upon what the Guests *fling* away, and, consequently, is apt to *Snarl* most, when there are the fewest *Bones*.

THUS much, I think, is sufficient to serve by Way of Address to my Patrons, the *true modern Criticks*, and may very well atone for my past Silence, as well as that which I am like to observe for the future. I hope I have deserved so well of their whole *Body*, as to meet with generous and tender Usage at their *Hands*. Supported by which Expectation, I go on boldly to pursue those Adventures already so happily begun.

SECTION IV.

A TALE of a TUB.

I HAVE now with much Pains and Study, conducted the Reader to a Period, where he must expect to hear of great Revolutions. For no sooner had Our *Learned Brother*, so often mentioned, got a warm House of his own over his Head, than he began to look big, and to take mightily upon him; insomuch, that unless the gentle Reader out of his great Candour, will please a little to exalt his Idea, I am afraid he will henceforth hardly know the *Hero* of the Play, when he happeneth to meet Him; his Part, his Dress, and his Mien being so much altered.

HE told his Brothers, he would have them to know, that he was their Elder, and, consequently, his Father's sole Heir: Nay, a while after, he would not allow them to call Him Brother, but Mr. *PETER*. And then he must be styled, *Father PETER*; and sometimes, *My Lord PETER*. To support this Grandeur, which he soon began to consider could not be maintained without a better *Fonde* than what he was born to: After much Thought, he cast about, at last, to turn *Projector* and *Virtuoso*, wherein he so well succeeded, that many famous Discoveries, Projects, and Machines, which bear great Vogue and Practice at present in the World, are owing entirely to *Lord Peter's* Invention. I will deduce the best Account I have been able to collect of the Chief amongst them, without considering much the Order they came out in; because, I think, Authors are not well agreed as to that Point.

I hope, when this Treatise of mine shall be translated into foreign Languages, (as I may without Vanity affirm, That the Labour of collecting, the

the Faithfulness in recounting, and the great Usefulness of the Matter to the Publick, will amply deserve that Justice) that the worthy Members of the several *Academies* abroad, especially those of *France* and *Italy*, will favourably accept these humble Offers, for the Advancement of Universal Knowledge. I do also advertise the most Reverend Fathers the *Eastern* Missionaries, that I have, purely for their Sakes, made Use of such Words and Phrases, as will best admit an easy Turn into any of the *Oriental* Languages, especially the *Chinese*. And so I proceed with great Content of Mind, upon reflecting, how much Emolument this whole Globe of Earth is like to reap by my Labours.

THE first undertaking of *Lord Peter*, was to purchase a * large Continent, lately said to have been discovered in *Terra Australis incognita*. This Tract of Land he bought at a very great Penny-worth from the Discoverers themselves, (although some pretended to doubt whether they had ever been there) and then retailed it into several Cantons to certain Dealers, who carried over Colonies, but were all Shipwreckt in the Voyage. Upon which, *Lord Peter* sold the said Continent to other Customers again, and again, and again, and again, with the same Success.

THE second Project I shall mention, was his † Sovereign Remedy for the *Worms*, especially those in the *Spleen*. ‡ The Patient was to eat nothing after Supper for three Nights : As soon as he went

E 3

to

* That is *Purgatory*.

† Penance and Absolution are plaid upon under the Notion of a Sovereign Remedy for the Worms, especially in the *Spleen*, which by observing *Peter's* Prescription would void insensibly by Perspiration ascending thro' the Brain, &c. W. Wotton.

‡ Here the Author ridicules the Penances of the Church of Rome, which may be made as easy to the Sinner as he pleaseth, provided he will pay for them accordingly.

to Bed, he was carefully to lye on one Side, and when he grew weary, to turn upon the other: He must also duly confine his two Eyes to the same Object; and by no Means to break Wind at both Ends together, without manifest Occasion. These Prescriptions diligently observed, the *Worms* would void insensibly by Perspiration, ascending through the Brain.

A THIRD Invention was the erecting of a * *Whispering-Office*, for the publick Good and Ease of all such as are Hypochondriacal, or troubled with the Cholick; as Midwives, small Politicians, Friends fallen out, repeating Poets, Lovers, happy, or in Despair, Bawds, Privy-counsellors, Pages, Parasites, and Buffoons: In short, of all such as are in Danger of bursting with too much *Wind*. An *Ass's* Head was placed so conveniently, that the Party affected might easily with his Mouth accost either of the Animal's Ears; which he was to apply close for a certain Space, and by a fugitive Faculty, peculiar to the Ears of that Animal, receive immediate Benefit, either by Eructation, or Expiration, or Evomition.

ANOTHER very beneficial Project of Lord Peter's was an † *Office of Insurance*, for Tobacco-pipes, Martyrs of the Modern Zeal: Volumes of Poetry, Shadows, - - - - - and Rivers: That these, nor any of these shall receive Damage by *Fire*. From whence our *Friendly Societies* may plainly find themselves, to be only Transcribers from this Original; although the one and the other have been of great Benefit to the Undertakers, as well as of equal to the Publick.

LORD

* By his *Whispering-Office*, for the Relief of *Eyes-droppers*, Physicians, Bawds, and Privy-counsellors, he ridiculeth auricular Confession, and the Priest who takes it is described by the *Ass's* Head. W. Wotton.

† This I take to be the Office of Indulgences, the gross Abuses whereof first gave Occasion for the Reformation.

LORD Peter was also held the original Author of * *Puppets* and *Raree-Shows*; the great Usefulness whereof being so generally known, I shall not enlarge farther upon this Particular.

BUT, another Discovery for which he was much renowned, was his famous Universal † *Pickle*. For having remarked how your ‡ common *Pickle* in Use among Housewives, was of no farther Benefit than to preserve dead Flesh, and certain Kinds of Vegetables; *Peter*, with great Cost as well as Art, had contrived a *Pickle* proper for Houses, Gardens, Towns, Men, Women, Children, and Cattle; wherein he could preserve them as sound as Insects in Amber. Now, this *Pickle* to the Taste, the Smell, and the Sight, appeared exactly the same, with what is in common Service for Beef, and Butter, and Herrings, (and hath been often that Way applied with great Success) but for its many sovereign Virtues was a quite different Thing. For *Peter* would put in a certain Quantity of his || *Powder-Pimperlimpimp*, after which it never failed of Success. The Operation was performed by *Spargement* in a proper Time of the Moon. The Patient who was to be pickled, if it were a House, would infallibly be preserved from all Spiders, Rats, and Weazles;

* *I believe are the Monkeries and ridiculous Processions, &c. among the Papists.*

† *Holy Water he calleth an Universal Pickle to preserve Houses, Gardens, Towns, Men, Women, Children and Cattle, wherein he could preserve them as sound as Insects in Amber. W. Wotton.*

‡ *This is easily understood to be Holy Water, composed of the same Ingredients with many other Pickles.*

|| *And because Holy Water differs only in Consecration from common Water, therefore he tells us that his Pickle by the Powder of Pimperlimpimp receives new Virtues, although it differs not in Sight, nor Smell from the common Pickles, which preserve Beef, and Butter, and Herrings. W. Wotton.*

Weazles; If the Party affected were a Dog, he should be exempt from Mange, and Madnefs, and Hunger. It also infallibly took away all Scabs and Lice, and scalled Heads from Children, never hindering the Patient from any Duty, either at Bed or Board.

BUT of all *Peter's* Rarities, he most valued a certain Set of * *Bulls*, whose Race was by great Fortune preserved in a lineal Descent from those that guarded the *Golden Fleece*: Although some, who pretended to observe them curiously, doubted the Breed had not been kept entirely chaste; because they had been degenerated from their Ancestors in some Qualities, and had acquired others very extraordinary, but a foreign Mixture. The *Bulls* of *Colchos* are recorded to have *brazen Feet*, but whether it happened by ill Pasture and Running, by an Allay from Intervention of other Parents, from stolen Intrigues; whether a Weakness in their Progenitors had impaired the seminal Virtue; or, by a Decline necessary through a long Course of Time, the Originals of Nature being depraved in these latter sinful Ages of the World; Whatever was the Cause, it is certain that *Lord Peter's Bulls* were extremely vitiated by the Rust of Time in the Metal of their Feet, which was now sunk into common *Lead*. However, the terrible *roaring* peculiar to their Lineage was preserved; as likewise that Faculty of breathing out *Fire* from their Nostrils; which notwithstanding many of their Detractors took to be a Feat of Art, to be nothing so terrible as it appeared; proceeding only from their usual Course of Diet,

* *The papal Bulls are ridiculed by Name. So that here we are at no Loss for the Author's Meaning.* W. Wotton.

Ibid. Here the Author bath kept the Name, and means the Pope's Bulls, or rather his Fulminations and Excommunications of Heretical Princes, all signed with Lead and the Seal of the Fishermen.

Diet, which was of * *Squibs* and *Crackers*. However, they had two peculiar Marks which extremely distinguished them from the *Bulls of Jason*, and which I have not met together in the Description of any other Monster, beside that in *Horace*;

*Varias inducere plumas,
and
Atrum definit in piscem.*

For these had *Fishes Tails*, yet upon Occasion could out-fly any Bird in the Air. *Peter* put these *Bulls* upon several Employments. Sometimes he would set them a roaring to fright † *Naughty Boys*, and make them quiet. Sometimes he would send them out upon Errands of great Importance; where it is wonderful to recount, and perhaps the cautious Reader may think much to believe it; An *Appetitus sensibilis*, deriving itself, through the whole Family, from their noble Ancestors, Guardians of the *Golden Fleece*; they continued so extremely fond of *Gold*, that if *Peter* sent them Abroad, though it were only upon a Compliment, they would roar, and spit, and belch, and piss, and fart, and snivel out Fire, and keep a perpetual Coyl, till you flung them a Bit of *Gold*; but then, *Pulveris exigui jactu*, they would grow calm and quiet as Lambs. In short, whether by secret Connivance or Encouragement from their Master, or out of their own liquorish Affection to *Gold*, or both; it is certain they were no better than a Sort of sturdy, swaggering Beggars; and where they could not prevail to get an Alms, would make Women miscarry, and Children fall into Fits; who, to this very Day, usually call Sprites and Hobgoblins by the Name of *Bull-Beggars*. They grew at last so very troublesome

* *These are the Fulminations of the Pope threatening Hell and Damnation to those Princes who offend him,*

† *That is, Kings who incur his Displeasure.*

some to the Neighbourhood, that some Gentlemen of the *North-west* got a Parcel of right *English Bull-Dogs*, and baited them so terribly, that they felt it ever after.

I must needs mention one more of *Lord Peter's* Projects, which was very extraordinary, and discovered him to be a Master of a high Reach, and profound Invention. Whenever it happened that any Rogue of *Newgate* was condemned to be hanged, *Peter* would offer him a Pardon for a certain Sum of Money, which when the poor Caitiff had made all Shifts to scrape up and send, *His Lordship* would return a * Piece of Paper in this Form.

TO all Mayors, Sheriffs, Jailors, Constables, Bailiffs, Hangmen, &c. Whereas we are informed that A. B. remains in the Hands of you or any of you, under the Sentence of Death. We will and command you, upon Sight hereof, to let the said Prisoner depart to his own Habitation, whether he stands condemned for Murder, Sodomy, Rape, Sacrilege, Incest, Treason, Blasphemy, &c. for which this shall be your sufficient Warrant: And if you fail hereof, G--- d---mn You and Yours to all Eternity. And so we bid you heartily Farewel.

Your most humble

Man's Man,

EMPEROR PETER.

THE Wretches, trusting to this, lost their Lives and Money too.

I DESIRE

* This is a Copy of a General Pardon signed *Servus Servorum*.

Ibid. Absolution in *Articulo Mortis*, and the *Tax Camerae Apostolicæ* are jested upon in *Emperor Peter's Letter*. W. Wotton.

I DESIRE of those whom the *Learned* among Posterity will appoint for Commentators upon this elaborate Treatise; that they will proceed with great Caution upon certain dark Points, wherein all, who are not *Vere adepts*, may be in Danger to form rash and hasty Conclusions, especially in some mysterious Paragraphs, where certain *Arcana* are joined for Brevity Sake, which in the Operation must be divided. And, I am certain, that future Sons of Art, will return large Thanks to my Memory, for so grateful, so useful an *Innuendo*.

It will be no difficult Part to persuade the Reader, that so many worthy Discoveries met with great Success in the World: although I may justly assure him that I have related much the smallest Number: My Design having been only to single out such, as will be of most Benefit for publick Imitation, or which best served to give some Idea of the Reach and Wit of the Inventor. And therefore it need not be wondered, if, by this Time, *Lord Peter* was become exceeding Rich. But alas! he had kept his Brain so long, and so violently upon the Rack, that at last it shook itself, and began to turn round for a little Ease. In short, what with Pride, Projects, and Knavery, poor *Peter* was grown distracted, and conceived the strangest Imaginations in the World. In the Height of his Fits (as it is usual with those who run mad out of Pride) He would call himself * *God Almighty*, and sometimes *Monarch of the Universe*. I have seen him, (says my Author) take Three old † *High-crowned Hats*, and clap them all on his Head, Three Story high, with a huge Bunch of † *Keys* at his Girdle,

* *The Pope is not only allowed to be the Vicar of Christ, but by several Divines is called God upon Earth, and other blasphemous Titles.*

† *The triple Crown.*

† *The Keys of the Church.*

Ibid. *The Pope's Universal Monarchy, and his triple Crown, and Fisher's Ring.* W. Wotton.

Girdle, and an *Angling Rod* in his Hand. In which Guise, whoever went to take him by the Hand in the Way of Salutation, *Peter* with much Grace, like a well educated Spaniel, would present them with his * *Foot*, and if they refused his Civility, then he would raise it as high as their Chops, and give them a damned Kick on the Mouth, which hath ever since been called a *Salute*. Whoever walked by, without paying him their Compliments, having a wonderful strong Breath, he would blow their Hats off into the Dirt. Mean time, his Affairs at home went upside down; and his two Brothers had a wretched Time; where his first † *Boutade* was, to kick both their ‡ *Wives* one Morning out of Doors, and his own too, and, in their stead, gave Orders to pick up the first Three Strolers could be met with in the Streets. A while after, he nailed up the Cellar-door; and would not allow his Brothers a || Drop of *Drink* to their Victuals. Dining one Day at an Alderman's in the City, *Peter* observed him expatiating after the Manner of his Brethren, in the Praises of his Surloin of Beef. Beef, said the sage Magistrate, is the King of Meat; Beef comprehends in it the Quintessence of Partridge, and Quail, and Venison, and Pheasants, and Plum-pudding, and Custard. When *Peter* came home, he would needs take the Fancy of cooking up this Doctrine into Use, and apply the Precept in Default of a Surloin to his brown Loaf: Bread, says he

* Neither doth his arrogant Way of requiring Men to kiss his Slipper escape Reflection. W. Wotton.

† This Word properly signifies a sudden Jerk, or Lash of an Horse, when you do not expect it.

‡ The Celibacy of the Romish Clergy is struck at in *Peter's* beating his own and Brother's Wives out of Doors. W. Wotton.

|| The Pope's refusing the Cup to the Laity, persuading them that the Blood is contained in the Bread, and that the Bread is the real and entire Body of Christ.

he, Dear Brothers, is the Staff of Life; in which Bread is contained, inclusive, the Quintessence of Beef, Mutton, Veal, Venison, Partridge, Plum-pudding, and Custard: And to render all complete, there is intermingled a due Quantity of Water, whose Crudities are also corrected by Yeast or Barm, through which Means it becomes a wholesome fermented Liquor, diffused through the Mass of the Bread. Upon the Strength of these Conclusions, next Day at Dinner was the brown Loaf served up in all the Formality of a City Feast. Come Brothers, said Peter, fall to, and spare not; here is excellent good Mutton*; or hold, now my Hand is in, I will help you. At which Word, in much Ceremony, with Fork and Knife, he carves out two good Slices of a Loaf, and presenteth each on a Plate to his Brothers. The elder of the two, not suddenly entering into Lord Peter's Conceit, began with very civil Language to examine the Mystery. My Lord, said he, I doubt with great Submission, there may be some Mistake. What, says Peter, you are pleasant; Come then, let us hear this Jest, your Head is so big with. None in the World, my Lord; but unless I am very much deceived, your Lordship was pleased, a while ago, to let fall a Word about Mutton, and I would be glad to see it with all my Heart, How! said Peter, appearing in great Surprise, I do not comprehend this at all.---- Upon which, the Younger interposing, to set the Business right; My Lord, said he, my Brother I suppose is hungry, and longs for the Mutton your Lordship hath promised us to Dinner. Pray, said Peter, take me along with you, either you are both mad, or disposed to be merrier than I approve of: If You there, do not like your Piece, I will carve you another, although

F

I should

* Transubstantiation. Peter turns his Bread into Mutton, and, according to the popish Doctrine of Concomitants, his Wine too, which, in his Way, he calleth, Pauming his damned Crusts upon the Brothers for Mutton. W. Wotton.

I should take that to be the choice Bit of the whole Shoulder, What then, my Lord, replied the first, *it seems this is a Shoulder of Mutton all this while. Pray Sir,* says Peter, *eat your Victuals, and leave off your Impertinence, if you please, for I am not disposed to relish it at present:* But the other could not forbear being over-provoked at the affected Seriousness of Peter's Countenance. By G---, my Lord, said he, *I can only say, that to my Eyes, and Fingers, and Teeth, and Nose, it seems to be nothing but a Crust of Bread.* Upon which the second put in his Word: *I never saw a Piece of Mutton in my Life, so nearly resembling a Slice from a Twelve-penny Loaf. Look ye, Gentlemen, crieth Peter in a Rage, to convince you what a couple of blind, positive, ignorant, wilful Puppies you are, I will use but this plain Argument;* By G---, *it is true, good, natural Mutton as any in Leaden-hall Market;* and G--- *confound you both eternally, if you offer to believe otherwise.* Such a thundering Proof as this left no farther Room for Objection: The two Unbelievers began to gather and pocket up their Mistake as hastily as they could. *Why truly,* said the First, *upon more mature Consideration-----* Ay, says the other interrupting him, *now I have thought better on the Thing, your Lordship seemeth to have a great deal of Reason.* Very well, said Peter, *Here Boy, fill me a Beer-Glass of Claret. Here's to you both with all my Heart.* The two Brethren much delighted to see him so readily appeased returned their most humble Thanks, and said, they would be glad to pledge his Lordship: *That you shall,* said Peter, *I am not a Person to refuse you any Thing that is reasonable; Wine, moderately taken, is a Cordial; Here is a Glass apiece for you: It is true natural Juice from the Grape; none of your damned Vintners Brewings.* Having spoke thus, he presented to each of them another large dry Crust, bidding them drink it off, and not be bashful, for it would do them no Hurt. The two Brothers, after having performed the usual Office in such delicate Con-

junctions,

junctions, of staring a sufficient Period at *Lord Peter*, and each other; and finding how Matters were like to go, resolved not to enter on a new Dispute, but let him carry the Point as he pleased; for he was now got into one of his mad Fits, and to argue or expostulate further would only serve to render him a hundred times more untractable.

I HAVE chosen to relate this worthy Matter in all its Circumstances, because it gave a principal Occasion to that great and famous * *Rupture*, which happened about the same Time among these Brethren, and was never afterwards made up. But, of That, I shall treat at large in another Section.

HOWEVER, it is certain, that *Lord Peter*, even in his lucid Intervals, was very lewdly given in his common Conversation, extreme wilful and positive, and would at any Time rather argue to the Death, than allow himself to be once in an Error. Besides, he had an abominable Faculty of telling huge palpable *Lies* upon all Occasions; and swearing, not only to the Truth, but cursing the whole Company to Hell, if they pretended to make the least Scruple of believing him. One Time, he swore, he had a † *Cow* at home, which gave as much Milk at a Meal, as would fill Three Thousand Churches; and, what was yet more extraordinary, would never turn four. Another Time he was telling of an old ‡ *Sign-post* that belonged to his *Father*, with Nails and Timber enough on it, to build Sixteen large Men of War. Talking one Day of *Chinese* Waggon, which were made so light as to sail over Mountains: *Z---ds*, said Peter,

F 2

where

* By this *Rupture* is meant the Reformation.

† The ridiculous multiplying of the *Virgin Mary's* Milk among the Papists, under the Allegory of a Cow, which gave as much Milk at a Meal as would fill three thousand Churches. W. Wotton.

‡ By this *Sign-post* is meant the Cross of our blessed Saviour.

where is the Wonder of that? By G---, I saw a * large House of Lime and Stone travel over Sea and Land (granting that it stopped sometimes to bait) above two thousand German Leagues. And that which was the good of it, he would swear desperately all the while, that he never told a Lye in his Life; and at every Word, By G---, Gentlemen, I tell you nothing but the Truth; and the D---I broil them eternally that will not believe me.

In short, Peter grew so scandalous, that all the Neighbourhood began in plain Words to say, he was no better than a Knave. And his two Brothers, long weary of his ill Usage, resolved at last to leave him; but first, they humbly desired a Copy of their Father's Will, which had now lain by neglected, Time out of Mind. Instead of granting this Request, he called them *damned Sons of Whores, Rogues, Traytors*, and the rest of the vile Names he could muster up. However, while he was abroad one Day upon his Projects, the two Youngsters watched their Opportunity, made shift to come at the Will, † and took a *Copia vera*, by which they presently saw how grossly they had been abused: Their Father having left them equal Heirs, and strictly commanded, that whatever they got should lie in common among them all. Pursuant to which, their next Enterprize was to break open the Cellar Door,

* The Chappel of Loretto. He falls here only upon the ridiculous Inventions of Popery: The Church of Rome intended by these Things, to gull silly, superstitious People, and rook them of their Money; that the World had been too long in Slavery, our Ancestors gloriously redeemed us from that Yoke. The Church of Rome therefore ought to be exposed, and he deserves well of Mankind that doth expose it. W. Wotton.

Ibid. The Chappel of Loretto, which travelled from the Holy Land to Italy.

† Translated the Scriptures into the vulgar Tongues.

Door, and get a little good * *Drink* to spirit and comfort their Hearts. In copying the *Will*, they had met another Precept against Whoring, Divorce, and separate Maintenance: Upon which, their next † Work was to discard their Concubines, and send for their Wives. Whilst all this was in Agitation, there enters a Solicitor from *Newgate*, desiring *Lord Peter* would please to procure a *Pardon* for a *Thief* that was to be *hanged* To-morrow. But the two Brothers told him, he was a Coxcomb to seek Pardons from a Fellow, who deserved to be hanged much better than his Client; and discovered all the Method of that Imposture, in the same Form I delivered it a while ago, advising the Solicitor to put his Friend upon obtaining a ‡ *Pardon from the King*. In the midst of all this Clutter and Revolution, in comes *Peter* with a File of || Dragoons at his Heels; and gathering from all Hands what was in the Wind, He and his Gang, after several Millions of Scurrilities and Curses, not very important here to repeat, by main Force, very fairly § kicks them both out of Doors, and would never let them come under his Roof from that Day to this.

* Administred the Cup to the Laity at the Communion.

† Allowed the Marriages of Priests.

‡ Directed Penitents not to trust to Pardons and Absolutions procured for Money, but sent them to implore the Mercy of God, from whence alone Remission is to be obtained.

|| By *Peter's Dragoons*, is meant the Civil Power which those Princes, who were bigotted to the Romish Superstition, employed against the Reformers.

§ The Pope shuts all who dissent from him out of the Church.

S E C T. V.

A DIGRESSION in the MODERN KIND.

WE, whom the World is pleased to honour with the Title of *Modern Authors*, should never have been able to compass our great Design of an everlasting Remembrance, and never-dying Fame, if our Endeavours had not been so highly serviceable to the general Good of Mankind. This, *O Universe*, is the adventurous Attempt of me thy Secretary;

----- *Quemvis perferre laborem
Suadet, & inducit noctes vigilare serenas.*

To this End, I have some time since, with a World of Pains and Art, dissected the Carcase of *Human Nature*, and read many useful Lectures upon the several Parts, both *containing* and *contained*; until at last it *smelt* so strong, I could preserve it no longer. Upon which, I have been at a great Expence to fit up all the Bones with exact Contexture, and in due Symmetry; so that I am ready to shew a very compleat Anatomy thereof to all curious *Gentlemen and others*. But not to digress farther in the midst of a Digression, as I have known some Authors inclose Digressions in one another, like a Nest of Boxes; I do affirm, that, having carefully cut up *Human Nature*, I have found a very strange, new, and important Discovery; That the publick Good of Mankind is performed by two Ways, *Instruction*, and *Diversion*. And I have farther proved in my said several Readings, (which, perhaps the World may one Day see, if I can prevail on any Friend to steal a Copy, or on certain Gentlemen of my Admirers to be very importunate) that, as Mankind is now disposed, he receiveth much greater Advantage by being *Diverted* than *Instructed*;



L
f
f
e
A
in
d
to
L

o
L
R
th
co
th
P
fr
th
co
m
S
th
on
k
on
B
ta
ti

ba
W
w
be
is
un
the

Instructed; his epidemical Diseases being *Fastidiosity*, *Amorphy*, and *Oscitation*; whereas in the present universal Empire of Wit and Learning, there seemeth but little Matter left for *Instruction*. However, in Compliance with a Lesson of great Age and Authority, I have attempted carrying the Point in all its Heights; and accordingly, throughout this divine Treatise, have skillfully kneaded up both together with a *Layer of Utile* and a *Layer of Dulce*.

WHEN I consider how exceedingly our illustrious *Moderns* have eclipsed the weak glimmering Lights of the *Antients*, and turned them out of the Road of all fashionable Commerce, to a Degree; that our choice * Town Wits of most refined Accomplishments are in grave Dispute, whether there have been ever any *Antients* or no: In which Point we are like to receive wonderful Satisfaction from the most useful Labours and Lucubrations of that worthy *Modern*, Dr. Bently: I say, when I consider all this, I cannot but bewail, that no famous *Modern* hath ever yet attempted an universal System, in a small portable Volume, of all Things that are to be Known, or Believed, or Imagined, or Practised in Life. I am, however, forced to acknowledge, that such an Enterprize was thought on some time ago by a great Philosopher of † O. Brazile. The Method he proposed was by a certain curious *Receipt*, a *Nostrum*; which, after his untimely Death, I found among his Papers; and do
here

* The learned Person here meant by our Author hath been endeavouring to annihilate so many *Antient Writers*, that, until he is pleased to stop his Hand, it will be dangerous to affirm, whether there have been any *Antients* in the World.

† This is an imaginary Island, of Kin to that which is called the Painters Wives Island, placed in some unknown Part of the Ocean, merely at the Fancy of the Map-maker.

here, out of my great Affection to the *modern Learned*, present them with it, not doubting, it may one Day encourage some worthy Undertaker.

YOU take fair and correct Copies, well bound in Calfs-skin, and lettered at the Back, of all modern Bodies of Arts and Sciences whatsoever, and in what Language you please. These you distil in balneo Mariæ, infusing Quintessence of Poppy, Q. S. together with three Pints of Lethe, to be had from the Apothecaries. You cleanse away carefully the Sordes and Caput Mortuum, letting all that is volatile evaporate. You preserve only the first Running, which is again to be distilled seventeen times, till what remains will amount to about two Drams. This you keep in a Glass Vial Hermetically sealed, for one and twenty Days. Then you begin your Catholick Treatise, taking every Morning fasting, (first shaking the Vial) three Drops of this Elixir, snuffing it strongly up your Nose. It will dilate itself about the Brain (where there is any) in fourteen Minutes, and you immediately perceive in your Head an infinite Number of Abstracts, Summaries Compendiums, Extracts, Collections, Medulla's, Excerpta quædam's, Florilegia's, and the like, all disposed into great Order, and reducible upon Paper.

I must needs own, it was by the Assistance of this *Arcanum*, that I, although otherwise *impar*, have adventured upon so daring an Attempt; never achieved or undertaken before, but by a certain Author called *Homer*, in whom, although otherwise a Person not without some Abilities, and, for an *Antient*, of a tolerable Genius; I have discovered many gross Errors, which are not to be forgiven his very Ashes, if by chance any of them are left. For whereas, we are assured, he designed his Work for a * complete Body of all Knowledge Human, Divine, Political, and Mechanick; it is manifest,

* *Homerus omnes res humanas Poematis complexus est. Xenoph. in conviv.*

manifest, that he hath wholly neglected some, and been very imperfect in the rest. For first of all, as eminent a *Cabbalist* as his Disciples would represent him, his Account of the *Opus magnum* is extremely poor and deficient; he seemeth to have read but very superficially, either *Sendi-vogus*, *Behmen*, * *Anthroposophia Theomagica*. He is also quite mistaken about the *Sphæra Pyroplastica*, a Neglect not to be attoned for; and (if the Reader will admit so severe a Censure) *Vix crederem Autorem hunc unquam audivisse ignis vocem*. His Failings are not less prominent in several Parts of the *Mechanicks*. For having read his Writings with the utmost Application usual among modern Wits, I could never yet discover the least Direction about the Structure of that useful Instrument a *Save-all*. For want of which, if the Moderns had not lent their Assistance, we might yet have wandered in the Dark. But I have still behind a Fault more notorious to tax this author with; I mean, † his gross Ignorance in the *Common Laws of this Realm*, and in the Doctrine as well as Discipline of the Church of *England*. A Defect indeed, for which both he and all the Antients stand most justly censured by my worthy and ingenious Friend Mr. *W-tt-n*, Batchelor of Divinity, in his incomparable Treatise of *Antient and Modern Learning*; a Book never to be sufficiently valued, whether we consider the happy Turns and Flowings of the Author's Wit, the great Usefulness of his sublime

* *A Treatise written about fifty Years ago, by a Welsh Gentleman of Cambridge, his Name, as I remember was Vaughan, as appears by the Answer to it, writ by the learned Dr. Henry Moor; it is a Piece of the most unintelligible Fustian, that, perhaps, was ever published in any Language.*

† *Mr. W-tt-n (to whom our Author never gives any Quarter) in his Comparison of antient and modern Learning; numbers Divinity, Law, &c. among those Parts of Knowledge wherein we excel the Antients.*

sublime Discoveries upon the Subject of *Flies* and *Spittle*, or the laborious Eloquence of his Stile. And I cannot forbear doing that Author the Justice of my publick Acknowledgments, for the great *Helps* and *Liftings* I had out of his incomparable Piece, while I was penning this Treatise.

BUT, besides these Omissions in *Homer* already mentioned, the curious Reader will also observe several Defects in that Author's Writings, for which he is not altogether so accountable. For whereas every Branch of Knowledge hath received such wonderful Acquirements since his Age, especially within these last three Years, or thereabouts; it is almost impossible, he could be so very perfect in modern Discoveries, as his Advocates pretend. We freely acknowledge Him to be the Inventor of the *Compass*, of *Gunpowder*, and the *Circulation of the Blood*: But I challenge any of his Admirers to shew me in all his Writings a compleat Account of the *Spleen*: Doth he not also leave us wholly to seek in the Art of *Political Wagering*? What can be more defective and unsatisfactory than his long Dissertation upon *Tea*? And as to his Method of *Salivation without Mercury*, so much celebrated of late, it is, to my own Knowledge and Experience, a Thing very little to be relied on.

IT was to supply such momentous Defects, that I have been prevailed on, after long Sollicitation, to take Pen in Hand; and I dare venture to promise, the Judicious Reader shall find nothing neglected here, that can be of Use upon any Emergency of Life. I am confident to have included and exhausted all that Human Imagination can *Rise* or *Fall* to. Particularly, I recommend to the Perusal of the Learned certain Discoveries that are wholly untouched by others, whereof I shall only mention, among a great many more, *My new Help for Smatterers*, or the *Art of being Deep-learned and Shallow-read*. A curious Invention about *Mouse-traps*. An Universal Rule of Reason, or, Every Man

his own Carver; together with a most useful Engine for catching of Owls. All which the judicious Reader will find largely treated on, in the several Parts of this Discourse.

I HOLD myself obliged to give as much Light as is possible into the Beauties and Excellencies of what I am writing, because it is become the Fashion and Humour most applauded among the first Authors of this Polite and Learned Age, when they would correct the ill Nature of Critical, or inform the Ignorance of Courteous Readers. Besides, there have been several famous Pieces lately published both in Verse and Prose; wherein, if the Writers had not been pleased, out of their great Humanity and Affection to the Publick, to give us a nice Detail of the *Sublime* and the *Admirable* they contain; it is a thousand to one, whether we should ever have discovered one Grain of either. For my own particular, I cannot deny, that whatever I have said upon this Occasion had been more proper in a Preface, and more agreeable to the Mode, which usually directs it thither. But I here think fit to lay hold on that great and honourable Privilege of being the *Last Writer*; I claim an absolute Authority in Right, as the *fresh-est Modern*, which giveth me a despotic Power over all Authors before me. In the Strength of which Title, I do utterly disapprove and declare against that pernicious Custom of making the Preface a Bill of Fare to the Book. For I have always looked upon it as a high Point of Indiscretion in *Monster-mongers* and other *Retailers of strange Sights*, to hang out a fair large Picture over the Door, drawn after the Life, with a most eloquent Description underneath: This hath saved me many a Three-pence, for my Curiosity was fully satisfied, and I never offered to go in, although often invited by the urging and attending Orator, with his last *moving* and *standing* Piece of Rhetorick; Sir, Upon my Word, we are just going to begin. Such is exactly the

here, out of my great Affection to the *modern Learned*, present them with it, not doubting, it may one Day encourage some worthy Undertaker.

YOU take fair and correct Copies, well bound in Calfs-skin, and lettered at the Back, of all modern Bodies of Arts and Sciences whatsoever, and in what Language you please. These you distil in balneo Mariæ, infusing Quintessence of Poppy, Q. S. together with three Pints of Lethe, to be had from the Apothecaries. You cleanse away carefully the Sordes and Caput Mortuum, letting all that is volatile evaporate. You preserve only the first Running, which is again to be distilled seventeen times, till what remains will amount to about two Drams. This you keep in a Glass Vial Hermetically sealed, for one and twenty Days. Then you begin your Catholick Treatise, taking every Morning fasting, (first shaking the Vial) three Drops of this Elixir, snuffing it strongly up your Nose. It will dilate itself about the Brain (where there is any) in fourteen Minutes, and you immediately perceive in your Head an infinite Number of Abstracts, Summaries Compendiums, Extracts, Collections, Medulla's, Excerpta quædam's, Florilegia's, and the like, all disposed into great Order, and reducible upon Paper.

I must needs own, it was by the Assistance of this Arcanum, that I, although otherwise *impar*, have adventured upon so daring an Attempt; never achieved or undertaken before, but by a certain Author called *Homer*, in whom, although otherwise a Person not without some Abilities, and, for an Antient, of a tolerable Genius; I have discovered many gross Errors, which are not to be forgiven his very Ashes, if by chance any of them are left. For whereas, we are assured, he designed his Work for a * complete Body of all Knowledge Human, Divine, Political, and Mechanick; it is manifest,

* *Homerus omnes res humanas Poematis complexus est.* Xenoph. in conviv.

manifest, that he hath wholly neglected some, and been very imperfect in the rest. For first of all, as eminent a *Cabbalist* as his Disciples would represent him, his Account of the *Opus magnum* is extremely poor and deficient; he seemeth to have read but very superficially, either *Sendivogus*, *Behmen*, * *Anthroposophia Theomagica*. He is also quite mistaken about the *Sphæra Pyroplastica*, a Neglect not to be attoned for; and (if the Reader will admit so severe a Censure) *Vix crederem Autorem hunc unquam audivisse ignis vocem*. His Failings are not less prominent in several Parts of the *Mechanicks*. For having read his Writings with the utmost Application usual among modern *Wits*, I could never yet discover the least Direction about the Structure of that useful Instrument a *Save-all*. For want of which, if the *Moderns* had not lent their Assistance, we might yet have wandered in the Dark. But I have still behind a Fault more notorious to tax this author with; I mean, † his gross Ignorance in the *Common Laws of this Realm*, and in the Doctrine as well as Discipline of the Church of *England*. A Defect indeed, for which both he and all the *Antients* stand most justly censured by my worthy and ingenious Friend Mr. *W-tt-n*, Batchelor of Divinity, in his incomparable Treatise of *Antient and Modern Learning*; a Book never to be sufficiently valued, whether we consider the happy Turns and Flowings of the Author's Wit, the great Usefulness of his sublime

* *A Treatise written about fifty Years ago, by a Welsh Gentleman of Cambridge, his Name, as I remember was Vaughan, as appears by the Answer to it, writ by the learned Dr. Henry Moor; it is a Piece of the most unintelligible Fustian, that, perhaps, was ever published in any Language.*

† Mr. *W-tt-n* (to whom our Author never gives any Quarter) in his Comparison of antient and modern Learning; numbers Divinity, Law, &c. among those Parts of Knowledge wherein we excel the *Antients*.

sublime Discoveries upon the Subject of *Flies* and *Spittle*, or the laborious Eloquence of his Stile. And I cannot forbear doing that Author the Justice of my publick Acknowledgments, for the great *Helps* and *Liftings* I had out of his incomparable Piece, while I was penning this Treatise.

BUT, besides these Omissions in *Homer* already mentioned, the curious Reader will also observe several Defects in that Author's Writings, for which he is not altogether so accountable. For whereas every Branch of Knowledge hath received such wonderful Acquirements since his Age, especially within these last three Years, or thereabouts; it is almost impossible, he could be so very perfect in modern Discoveries, as his Advocates pretend. We freely acknowledge Him to be the Inventor of the *Compass*, of *Gunpowder*, and the *Circulation of the Blood*: But I challenge any of his Admirers to shew me in all his Writings a compleat Account of the *Spleen*: Doth he not also leave us wholly to seek in the Art of *Political Wagering*? What can be more defective and unsatisfactory than his long Dissertation upon *Tea*? And as to his Method of *Salivation without Mercury*, so much celebrated of late, it is, to my own Knowledge and Experience, a Thing very little to be relied on.

It was to supply such momentous Defects, that I have been prevailed on, after long Sollicitation, to take Pen in Hand; and I dare venture to promise, the Judicious Reader shall find nothing neglected here, that can be of Use upon any Emergency of Life. I am confident to have included and exhausted all that Human Imagination can *Rise* or *Fall* to. Particularly, I recommend to the Perusal of the Learned certain Discoveries that are wholly untouched by others, whereof I shall only mention, among a great many more, *My new Help for Smatterers*, or the *Art of being Deep-learned and Shallow-read*. *A curious Invention about Mouse-traps*. *An Universal Rule of Reason*, or, *Every Man*

his

his own Carver; together with a most useful Engine for *catching of Owls*. All which the judicious Reader will find largely treated on, in the several Parts of this Discourse.

I WOULD myself obliged to give as much Light as is possible into the Beauties and Excellencies of what I am writing, because it is become the Fashion and Humour most applauded among the first Authors of this Polite and Learned Age, when they would correct the ill Nature of Critical, or inform the Ignorance of Courteous Readers. Besides, there have been several famous Pieces lately published both in Verse and Prose; wherein, if the Writers had not been pleased, out of their great Humanity and Affection to the Publick, to give us a nice Detail of the *Sublime* and the *Admirable* they contain; it is a thousand to one, whether we should ever have discovered one Grain of either. For my own particular, I cannot deny, that whatever I have said upon this Occasion had been more proper in a Preface, and more agreeable to the Mode, which usually directs it thither. But I here think fit to lay hold on that great and honourable Privilege of being the *Last Writer*; I claim an absolute Authority in Right, as the *fresh-est Modern*, which giveth me a despotic Power over all Authors before me. In the Strength of which Title, I do utterly disapprove and declare against that pernicious Custom of making the Preface a Bill of Fare to the Book. For I have always looked upon it as a high Point of Indiscretion in *Monster-mongers* and other *Retailers of strange Sights*, to hang out a fair large Picture over the Door, drawn after the Life, with a most eloquent Description underneath: This hath saved me many a Three-pence, for my Curiosity was fully satisfied, and I never offered to go in, although often invited by the urging and attending Orator, with his last moving and standing Piece of Rhetorick; *Sir, Upon my Word, we are just going to begin.* Such is exactly the

the Fate, at this Time, of *Prefaces, Epistles, Advertisements, Introductions, Prolegomena's, Apparatuses, To-the-Readers*. This Expedient was admirable at first: Our great *Dryden* hath long carried it as far as it would go, and with incredible Success. He hath often said to me in Confidence, that the World would have never suspected him to be so great a Poet, if he had not assured them so frequently in his *Prefaces*, that it was impossible they could either doubt or forget it. Perhaps it may be so; However, I much fear, his Instructions have edified out of their Place, and taught Men to grow wiser in certain Points, where he never intended they should; for, it is lamentable to behold, with what a lazy Scorn, many of the yawning Readers in our Age do now a-days twirl over Forty or Fifty Pages of *Preface* and *Dedication*, (which is the usual *modern* Stint) as if it were so much *Latin*. Although it must be also allowed on the other hand, that a very considerable Number is known to proceed *Criticks* and *Wits*, by reading nothing else. Into which Two Factions, I think, all present Readers may justly be divided. Now, for myself, I profess to be of the former Sort; and therefore having the *modern* Inclination to expatiate upon the Beauty of my own Productions, and display the bright Parts of my Discourse: I thought best to do it in the Body of the Work, where, as it now lies, it makes a very considerable Addition to the Bulk of the Volume, *a Circumstance by no means to be neglected by a skilful Writer*.

HAVING thus paid my due Deference and Acknowledgment to an established Custom of our newest Authors, by *a long Digression unsought for, and an universal Censure unprovoked*; by forcing into the Light, with much Pains and Dexterity, my own Excellencies, and other Mens Defaults, with great Justice to myself and Candor to them; I now happily resume my Subject, to the infinite Satisfaction both of the Reader and the Author.

S E C T. VI.

A T A L E of a T U B.

WE left *Lord Peter* in open Rupture with his two Brethren, both for ever discarded from his House, and resigned to the wide World, with little or nothing to trust to. Which are Circumstances that render them proper Subjects for the Charity of a Writer's Pen to work on; Scenes of Misery ever affording the fairest Harvest for great Adventures. And in this the World may perceive the Difference between the Integrity of a generous Author, and that of a common Friend. The latter is observed to adhere close in Prosperity, but, on the Decline of Fortune, to drop suddenly off. Whereas, the generous Author, just on the contrary, findeth his Hero on the Dunghill, and from thence by gradual Steps raiseth him to a Throne, and then immediately withdraws, expecting not so much as Thanks for his Pains: In Imitation of which Example, I have placed *Lord Peter* in a noble House, given him a Title to wear, and Money to spend. There I shall leave him for some Time; returning where common Charity directeth me, to the Assistance of his two Brothers, at their lowest Ebb. However, I shall by no means forget my Character of an Historian, to follow the Truth, Step by Step, whatever happens, or where-ever it may lead me.

THE two Exiles, so nearly united in Fortune and Interest, took a Lodging together; where, at their first Leisure, they began to reflect on the numberless Misfortunes and Vexations of their Life past, and could not tell, on the sudden, to what Failure in their Conduct they ought to impute them. When, after some Recollection, they called to mind the Copy of their Father's *Will*, which they had so happily recovered. This was immediately

produced, and a firm Resolution taken between them to alter whatever was already amiss, and reduce all their future Measures to the strictest Obedience prescribed therein. The main Body of the *Will*, (as the Reader cannot easily have forgot) consisted in certain admirable Rules about the wearing of their Coats; in the Perusal whereof, the two Brothers at every Period duly comparing the Doctrine with the Practice, there was never seen a wider Difference between two Things; horrible downright Transgressions of every Point. Upon which, they both resolved, without further Delay, to fall immediately upon reducing the Whole, exactly after their Father's Model.

BUT, here it is good to stop the hasty Reader, ever impatient to see the End of an Adventure, before We Writers can duly prepare him for it. I am to record, that these two Brothers began to be distinguished at this Time by certain Names. One of them desired to be called * *MARTIN*, and the other took the Appellation of † *JACK*. These two had lived in much Friendship and Agreement under the Tyranny of their Brother *Peter*, as it is the Talent of Fellow-sufferers to do: Men in Misfortune, being like Men in the dark, to whom all Colours are the same: But when they came forward into the World, and began to display themselves to each other, and to the Light, their Complexions appeared extremely different; which the present Posture of their Affairs gave them sudden Opportunity to discover.

BUT, here the severe Reader may justly tax me as a Writer of short Memory, a Deficiency to which a true *Modern* cannot but of Necessity be a little subject: Because *Memory*, being an Employment of the Mind upon Things past, is a Faculty, for which the Learned, in our Illustrious Age, have

no

* *Martin Luther,*

† *John Calvin,*



nō
Inu
or
wh
pro
una
tho
Pag
int
Tr
any
on
Me
and
fall
gin
La
Pos
for
sta
Fo
wh
the
by

W
for
at
Pos
Do
th
the
ho
be
me

pro
w
of

no Manner of Occasion, who deal entirely with *Invention*, and strike all Things out of themselves, or, at least, by Collision, from each other: Upon which Account we think it highly Reasonable to produce our great Forgetfulness, as an Argument unanswerable for our great Wit. I ought, in Method, to have informed the Reader, about fifty Pages ago, of a Fancy *Lord Peter* took, and infused into his Brothers, to wear on their Coats whatever Trimmings came up in Fashion; never pulling off any, as they went out of the Mode, but keeping on all together; which amounted in Time to a Medley, the most Antick you can possibly conceive; and this to a Degree, that, upon the Time of their falling out, there was hardly a Thread of the Original Coat to be seen, but an infinite Quantity of *Lace*, and *Ribbons*, and *Fringe*, and *Embroidery*, and *Points*; (I mean, only these * *tagged with Silver*, for the rest fell off.) Now, this material Circumstance, having been forgot in due Place, as good Fortune hath ordered, comes in very properly here, when the Two Brothers are just going to reform their Vestures into the primitive State, prescribed by their Father's *Will*.

THEY both unanimously entered upon this great Work, looking sometimes on their Coats, and sometimes on the *Will*. *Martin* laid the first Hand; at one Twitch brought off a large Handful of *Points*, and with a second Pull stripped away Ten Dozen Yards of *Fringe*. But when he had gone thus far, he demurred a while: He knew very well there yet remained a great deal more to be done; however, the first Heat being over, his Violence began to cool, and he resolved to proceed more moderately in the rest of the Work; having al-

G 2

ready

* *Points tagged with Silver*, are those Doctrines that promote the Greatness and Wealth of the Church, which have been therefore woven deepest in the Body of Popery.

ready very narrowly escaped a swinging Rent in pulling off the *Points*, which being tagged with *Silver*, (as we observed before) the judicious Workman had, with much Sagacity, double sown, to preserve them from falling. Resolving therefore to rid his Coat of a huge Quantity of *Gold Lace*, he picked up the Stitches with much Caution, and diligently gleaned out all the loose Threads as he went, which proved to be a Work of Time. Then he fell about the Embroidered *Indian Figures* of Men, Women, and Children; against which, as you have heard in its due Place, their Father's Testament was extremely exact and severe: These, with much Dexterity and Application, were, after a while, quite eradicated, or utterly defaced. For the rest, where he observed the Embroidery to be worked so close, as not to be got away without damaging the Cloth, or where it served to hide or strengthen any Flaw in the Body of the Coat, contracted by the perpetual Tampering of Workmen upon it; he concluded the wisest Course was to let it remain, resolving in no Case whatsoever, that the Substance of the Stuff should suffer Injury; which he thought the best Method for serving the true Intent and Meaning of his Father's *Will*. And this is the nearest Account I have been able to collect of *Martin's* Proceedings upon this great Revolution.

BUT his Brother *Jack*, whose Adventures will be so extraordinary, as to furnish a great Part in the Remainder of this Discourse; entered upon the Matter with other Thoughts, and a quite different Spirit. For the Memory of *Lord Peter's* Injuries produced a Degree of Hatred and Spight, which had a much greater Share of inciting Him, than any Regards after his Father's Commands, since these appeared, at best, only secondary and subservient to the other. However for this Medley of Humour he made a shift to find a very plausible Name, honouring it with the Title of *Zeal*; which

is, perhaps, the most significant Word that hath been ever yet produced in any Language; as, I think, I have fully proved in my excellent *Analytical* Discourse upon that Subject; wherein I have deduced a *Histori-theo-physi-logical* Account of Zeal, shewing how it first proceeded from a *Notion* into a *Word*, and from thence, in a hot Summer, ripened into a *tangible Substance*. This Work, containing Three large Volumes in Folio, I design very shortly to publish by the *Modern Way of Subscription*, not doubting but the Nobility and Gentry of the Land will give me all possible Encouragement, having already had such a Taste of what I am able to perform.

I RECORD therefore, that Brother *Jack*, brimful of this miraculous Compound, reflecting with Indignation upon *PETER's* Tyranny, and farther provoked by the Despondency of *Martin*; prefaced his Resolutions to this Purpose. *What*, said he, *A Rogue that locked up his Drink, turned away our Wives, cheated us of our Fortunes; paumed his damned Crusts upon us for Mutton; and at last kicked us out of Doors: must we be in his Fashions with a Pox? A Rascal, besides, that all the Street cries out against.* Having thus kindled and enflamed himself as high as possible, and, by Consequence, in a delicate Temper for beginning a Reformation, he set about the Work immediately, and in three Minutes made more Dispatch than *Martin* had done in as many Hours. For, (Courteous Reader) you are given to understand, that Zeal is never so highly obliged, as when you set it a *Tearing*: And *Jack*, who doated on that Quality in himself, allowed it at this Time its full Swing. Thus it happened, that stripping down a Parcel of *Gold Lace*, a little too hastily, he rent the *main Body* of his Coat from Top to Bottom; and whereas his Talent was not of the happiest in *taking up a Stitch*, he knew no better Way than to dearn it again with *Packthread* and a *Skewer*. But the Matter

was yet infinitely worse (I record it with Tears) when he proceeded to the *Embroidery*: For, being clumsy by Nature, and of Temper impatient, withal, beholding Millions of Stitches, that required the nicest Hand, and sedatest Constitution, to extricate; in a great Rage, he tore off the whole Piece, Cloth and all, and flung it into the Kennel, and furiously thus continuing his Career: *Ab, good Brother Martin, said he, do as I do, for the Love of God; strip, tear, pull, rent, flay off all, that we may appear as unlike that Rogue Peter, as it is possible: I would not for an Hundred Pounds carry the least Mark about me, that might give Occasion to the Neighbours of suspecting I was related to such a Rascal.* But Martin, who at this Time happened to be extremely flegmatick and sedate, begged his Brother of all *Love not to damage his Coat by any Means; for he never would get such another.* Desired him to consider, that it was not their Business to form their Actions by any Reflection upon Peter, but by observing the Rules prescribed in their Father's Will. That he should remember, Peter was still their Brother, whatever Faults or Injuries he had committed; and therefore they should by all means avoid such a Thought, as that of taking Measures for Good and Evil, from no other Rule than of Opposition to him. That it was true, the Testament of their good Father was very exact in what related to the wearing of their Coats; yet was it no less penal and strict in prescribing Agreement, and Friendship, and Affection between them. And therefore, if straining a Point were at all dispensable, it would certainly be so, rather to the Advance of Unity, than Increase of Contradiction.

MARTIN had still proceeded as gravely as he began; and, doubtless, would have delivered an admirable Lecture of Morality, which might have exceedingly contributed to my Reader's *Repose*, both of Body and Mind: (The true ultimate End of *Ethicks*;) but Jack was already gone a Flight shot beyond his Patience. And as in Scholastick Dis-

putes nothing serveth to rouse the Spleen of him
 that *opposeth*, so much as a Kind of Pedantick af-
 fected Calmness in the *Respondent*; Disputants being
 for the most Part like unequal Scales, where the
Gravity of one Side advances the *Lightness* of the
 other, and causeth it to fly up and kick the Beam.
 So it happened here, that the *Weight* of *Martin's*
 Arguments exalted *Jack's Levity*, and made him
 fly out and spurn against his Brother's Moderation.
 In short, *Martin's Patience* put *Jack* in a *Rage*; but
 that which most afflicted him was, to observe his
 Brother's Coat so well reduced into the State of
 Innocence; while his own was either wholly rent to
 his Shirt; or those Places, which had escaped his
 cruel Clutches, were still in *Peter's Livery*. So that
 he looked like a drunken *Beau*, half rifled by Bul-
 lies; or like a fresh Tenant of *Newgate*, when he
 hath refused the Payment of *Garnish*; or like a dis-
 covered *Shoplifter* left to the Mercy of *Exchange-*
women; or like a *Bawd*, in her old Velvet-Petticoat,
 resigned into the secular Hands of the *Mobile*. Like
 any, or like all of these, a Medley of *Rags*, and
Lace, and *Rents*, and *Fringes*, unfortunate *Jack*
 did now appear. He would have been extremely
 glad to see his Coat in the Condition of *Martin's*:
 but infinitely gladder to find that of *Martin's* in
 the same Predicament with his. However, since
 neither of these was likely to come to pass, he
 thought fit to lend the whole Business another
 Turn, and to dress up Necessity into a Virtue.
 Therefore, after as many of the *Fox's* Arguments,
 as he could muster up, for bringing *Martin* to *Rea-*
son, as he called; or, as he meant it, into his own
 ragged bobtailed Condition; and observing he said
 all to little Purpose; what, alas! was left for the
 forlorn *Jack* to do, but, after a Million of Scurrili-
 ties against his Brother, to run mad with Spleen, and
 Spight, and Contradiction. To be short, here be-
 gan a mortal Breach between these two. *Jack*
 went immediately to *New Lodgings*, and in a few
 Days

Days it was for certain reported, that he had run out of his Wits. In a short Time after, he appeared abroad, and confirmed the Report, by falling into the oddest Whimfies that ever a sick Brain conceived.

AND now the little Boys in the Streets began to salute him with several Names. Sometimes they would call him, * *Jack the bald*; sometimes, † *Jack with a Lanthorn*; sometimes, ‡ *Dutch Jack*: sometimes, || *French Hugh*; sometimes, § *Tom the Beggar*; and sometimes, ¶ *Knocking Jack of the North*. And it was under one, or some, or all of these Appellations (which I leave the learned Reader to determine) that he hath given Rise to the most Illustrious and Epidemick Sect of *Æolists*, who, with honourable Commemoration, do still acknowledge the Renowned *JACK* for their Author and Founder. Of whose Original, as well as Principles, I am now advancing to gratify the World with a very particular Account.

----*Mellæo contingens cuncta Lepore.*

* *That is Calvin, from Calvus, bald.*

† *All those who pretend to Inward Light.*

‡ *Jack of Leyden, who gave Rise to the Anabaptists.*

|| *The Hugonots.*

§ *The Gueneses, by which Name some Protestants in Flanders were called.*

¶ *John Knox, the Reformer of Scotland.*

S E C T

S E C T. VII.

A DIGRESSION in Praise of DIGRESSIONS.

I HAVE sometimes heard of an *Iliad* in a *Nut-shell*; but it hath been my Fortune to have much oftener seen a *Nut-shell* in an *Iliad*. There is no doubt, that Human Life hath received most wonderful Advantages from both; but to which of the two the World is chiefly indebted, I shall leave among the curious, as a Problem worthy of their utmost Enquiry. For the Invention of the latter, I think; the Commonwealth of Learning is chiefly obliged to the great *Modern* Improvement of *Digressions*: The late Refinements in Knowledge, running parallel to those of Diet in our Nation, which among Men of a judicious Taste, are drest up in various Compounds, consisting in *Soups* and *Ollios*, *Fricassees* and *Ragousts*.

It is true, there is a Sort of morose, detracting, ill-bred People, who pretend utterly to disrelish these polite Innovations; and as to the Similitude from Dyet, they allow the Parallel, but are so bold as to pronounce the Example itself a Corruption and Degeneracy of Taste. They tell us that the Fashion of jumbling fifty Things together in a Dish was at first introduced in Compliance to a depraved and debauched Appetite, as well as to a crazy Constitution; and to see a Man hunting through an *Ollio*, after the Head and Brains of a Goose, a Wigeon, or a Wood-cock, is a Sign he wanteth a Stomach and Digestion for more substantial Victuals. Farther, they affirm, that *Digressions* in a Book are like Foreign Troops in a State, which argue the Nation to want a Heart and Hands of its own, and often either subdue the *Natives*, or drive them into the most unfruitful Corners.

BUT, after all that can be objected by these supercilious Censors, it is manifest, the Society of Writers

Writers would quickly be reduced to a very inconsiderable Number; if Men were put upon making Books, with the fatal Confinement of delivering nothing beyond what is to the Purpose. It is acknowledged, that were the Case the same among Us, as with the *Greeks* and *Romans*, when Learning was in its *Cradle*, to be reared, and fed, and cloathed by *Invention*; it would be an easy Task to fill up Volumes upon particular Occasions, without farther expatiating from the Subject, than by moderate Excursions helping to advance or clear the main Design. But with *Knowledge*, it hath fared as with a numerous Army, encamped in a fruitful Country; which for a few Days maintaineth itself by the Product of the Soil it is on; until, Provisions being spent, they send to forage many a Mile, among Friends or Enemies it matters not. Mean while, the neighbouring Fields, trampled and beaten down, become barren and dry, affording no Sustenance but Clouds of Dust.

THE whole Course of Things being thus entirely changed between *Us* and the *Antients* and the *Moderns* wisely sensible of it, we of this Age have discovered a shorter, and more prudent Method, to become *Scholars* and *Wits*, without the Fatigue of *Reading* or of *Thinking*. The most accomplished Way of using Books at present is twofold: Either first, to serve them as some Men do *Lords*, learn their *Titles* exactly, and then brag of their Acquaintance: Or, secondly, which is indeed the choicer, the profounder, and politer Method, to get a thorough Insight into the *Index*, by which the whole Book is governed and turned, like *Fishes* by the *Tail*. For, to enter the Palace of Learning at the *great Gate* requireth an Expence of Time and Forms; therefore Men of much Haste and little Ceremony are content to get in by the *Back-door*. For the Arts are all in a *flying* March, and therefore more easily subdued by attacking them in the *Rear*. Thus Physicians disco-

ver

ver the State of the whole Body, by consulting only what cometh from *behind*. Thus Men catch Knowledge by throwing their *Wit* on the *Posteriors* of a Book, as Boys do Sparrows with flinging *Salt* upon their *Tails*. Thus Human Life is best understood by the wise Man's Rule of *Regarding the End*. Thus are the Sciences found like *Hercules's Oxen*, by *tracing them backwards*. Thus are *old Sciences* unravelled like *old Stockings*, by beginning at the *Foot*.

BESIDES all this, the Army of the Sciences hath been of late, with a World of Martial Discipline, drawn into its *close Order*; so that a View, or a Muster may be taken of it with Abundance of Expedition. For this great Blessing we are wholly indebted to *Systems* and *Abstracts*, in which the *modern Fathers* of Learning, like prudent Usurers, spent their Sweat for the Ease of us their Children. For *Labour* is the Seed of *Idleness*, and it is the peculiar Happiness of our Noble Age to gather the *Fruit*.

Now the Method of growing Wise, Learned, and *Sublime*, having become so regular an Affair, and so established in all its Forms; the Numbers of Writers must needs have encreased accordingly, and to a Pitch that hath made it of absolute Necessity for them to interfere continually with each other. Besides, it is reckoned, that there is not, at this present, a sufficient Quantity of new Matter left in Nature, to furnish and adorn any one particular Subject to the Extent of a Volume. This I am told by a very skilful *Computer*, who hath given a full Demonstration of it from Rules of *Arithmetick*.

THIS, perhaps, may be objected against, by those who maintain the Infinity of Matter, and, therefore, will not allow that any *Species* of it can be exhausted. For Answer to which, let us examine the noblest Branch of *modern Wit* or Invention, planted and cultivated by the present Age, and,

and which, of all others, hath born the most, and the fairest Fruit. For although some Remains of it were left us by the *Antients*, yet have not any of those, as I remember, been translated or compiled into Systems for *modern Use*. Therefore We may affirm, to our own Honour, that it hath, in some sort, been both invented, and brought to a Perfection by the same Hands. What I mean is, that highly celebrated Talent among the *modern Wits*, of deducing Similitudes, Allusions, and Applications, very Surprizing, Agreeable, and Apposite, from the *Pudenda* of either Sex, together with *their proper Uses*. And truly, having observed how little Invention beareth any Vogue, besides what is derived into these *Channels*, I have sometimes had a Thought, that the happy Genius of our Age and Country was prophetically held forth by that antient * typical Description

* *Ctesia fragm.* of the *Indian Pygmies*; whose Stature apud Photium. did not exceed above two Foot; Sed quorum pudenda crassa, & ad talos usque pertingentia. Now, I have been very curious to inspect the late Productions, wherein the Beauties of this Kind have most prominently appeared. And although this *Vein* hath bled so freely, and all Endeavours have been used in the Power of Human

Breath, to dilate, extend, and keep † *Herodot. L. 4.* it open: Like the *Scythians* † who had a Custom, and an Instrument, to blow up the Privities of their Mares, that they might yield the more Milk: Yet I am under an Apprehension, it is near growing dry, and past all Recovery: And that either some new *Fonde* of Wit should, if possible, be provided, or else that we must even be content with Repetition here, as well as upon all other Occasions.

THIS will stand as an uncontestable Argument, that our *modern Wits* are not to reckon upon the Infinity of Matter for a constant Supply. What remains therefore, but that our last Recourse must be

be had to large *Indexes*, and little *Compendiums*; *Quotations* must be plentifully gathered, and booked in Alphabet; To this End, although Authors need be little consulted, yet *Criticks*, and *Commentators*, and *Lexicons* carefully must. But above all, those judicious Collectors of *bright Parts*, and *Flowers*, and *Observandas*, are to be nicely dwelt on; by some called the *Sieves* and *Boulters* of Learning; although it is left undetermined, whether they dealt in *Pearls* or *Meal*; and consequently, whether we are more to value that which *passed through*, or what *staid behind*.

By these Methods, in a few Weeks, there starteth up many a Writer, capable of managing the profoundest, and most universal Subjects. For, what although his *Head* be empty, provided his *Common-place-Book* be full: And, if you will bate him but the Circumstances of *Method*, and *Style*, and *Grammar*, and *Invention*, allow him but the common Privileges of transcribing from others, and digressing from himself, as often as he shall see Occasion: He will desire no more Ingredients towards fitting up a Treatise, that shall make a very comely Figure on a Bookseller's Shelf, there to be preserved neat and clean, for a long Eternity, adorned with the Heraldry of its Title, fairly inscribed on a Label; never to be thumb'd or greas'd by Students, nor bound to everlasting Chains of Darkness in a Library: But, when the Fulness of Time is come, shall happily undergo the Tryal of Purgatory, in order to *ascend the Sky*.

WITHOUT these Allowances, how is it possible, we *modern Wits* should ever have an Opportunity to introduce our Collections list'd under so many Thousand Heads of a different Nature? For want of which the learned World would be deprived of infinite Delight, as well as Instruction, and we ourselves buried beyond Redress in an inglorious and undistinguished Oblivion.

FROM such Elements as these, I am alive to behold the Day, wherein the Corporation of Authors can outvie all its Brethren in the *Guild*. A Happiness derived to us, with a great many others, from our *Scythian* Ancestors; among whom the Number of *Pens* was so infinite, that the

* *Herodot.*

L. 4.

* *Grecian* Eloquence had no other Way of expressing it, than by saying, *That in the Regions, far to the North, it was hardly possible for a Man to travel, the very Air was so replete with Feathers.*

THE Necessity of this Digression will easily excuse the Length; and I have chosen for it as proper a Place as I could readily find. If the judicious Reader can assign a fitter, I do here empower him to remove it into any other Corner he pleaseth. And so I return with great Alacrity to pursue a more important Concern.

S E C T. VIII.

A T A L E of a T U B.

THE Learned * *Æolists* maintain the Original Cause of all Things to be *Wind*, from which Principle this whole Universe was at first produced, and into which it must at last be resolved; that the same Breath which had kindled, and blew up the Flame of Nature, should one Day blow it out.

Quod procul a nobis flestat Fortuna gubernans.

THIS is what the *Adepti* understand by their *Anima Mundi*; that is to say, the *Spirit*, or *Breath*, or *Wind* of the World; For examine the whole System by the Particulars of Nature, and you will find it not to be disputed. For, whether you please to call the *Forma informans* of Man, by the Name of *Spiritus*, *Animus*, *Afflatus*, or *Anima*; what are all these but several Appellations for *Wind*? which is the ruling *Element* in every Compound, and into which they all resolve upon their Corruption. Farther, what is Life itself, but, as it is commonly called, the *Breath* of our Nostrils? Whence it is very justly observed by Naturalists, that *Wind* still continues of great Emolument in *certain Myseries* not to be named, giving Occasion for those happy Epithets of *Turgidus*, and *Inflatus*, applied either to the *Emittent*, or *Recipient* Organs.

By what I have gathered out of antient Records, I find the *Compass* of their Doctrine took in two and thirty Points, wherein it would be tedious to be very particular. However, a few of their most important Precepts, deducible from it, are by no means to be omitted; among which the following Maxim was of much Weight; that since *Wind* had

* All Pretenders to Inspiration whatsoever.

the Master-share, as well as Operation in every Compound, by Consequence those Beings must be of chief Excellence, wherein that *Primordium* appears most prominently to abound; and, therefore, *Man* is in highest Perfection of all created Things, as having, by the great Bounty of Philosophers, been endued with three distinct *Animas* or *Winds*, to which the Sage *Æolists*, with much Liberality, have added a fourth of equal Necessity, as well as Ornament with the other three; by this *quantum Principium*, taking in our four Corners of the World; which gave Occasion to that renowned *Cabbalist*, * *Bumbastus*, of placing the Body of *Man*, in due Position to the four *Cardinal* Points.

IN Consequence of this, their next Principle was, that *Man* brings with him into the World a peculiar Portion or Grain of *Wind*, which may be called a *Quinta essentia*, extracted from the other four. This *Quintessence* is of a Catholick Use upon all Emergencies of Life; is improveable into all Arts and Sciences, and may be wonderfully refined, as well as enlarged by certain Methods in Education. This, when *blown* up to its Perfection, ought not to be covetously hoarded up, stifled, or hid under a Bushel, but freely communicated to Mankind. Upon these Reasons, and others of equal Weight, the wise *Æolists* affirm the Gift of BELCHING to be the noblest Act of a Rational Creature. To cultivate which Art, and render it more serviceable to Mankind, they made use of several Methods. At certain Seasons of the Year, you might behold the Priests amongst them in vast Numbers, with their † *Mouths gaping wide against a Storm*. At other Times were to be seen several Hundreds
linked

* *This is one of the Names of Paracelsus; He was called Christophorus, Theophrastus, Paracelsus, Bumbastus.*

† *This is meant of those seditious Preachers, who blow up the Seeds of Rebellion, &c.*

linked together in a circular Chain, with every Man a Pair of Bellows applied to his Neighbour's Breech, by which they blew up each other to the Shape and Size of a *Tun*; and for that Reason, with great Propriety of Speech, did usually call their Bodies their *Vessels*. When, by these and the like Performances, they were grown sufficiently replete, they would immediately depart, and disem-bogue for the Publick Good a plentiful Share of their Acquirements into their Disciples Chaps. For we must here observe, that all Learning was esteemed among them to be compounded from the same Principle. Because, First, it is generally affirmed, or confessed, that Learning *puffeth Men up*: And secondly, they proved it by the following Syllogism, *Words are but Wind; and Learning is nothing but Words; Ergo, Learning is nothing but Wind*. For this Reason, the Philosophers among them did, in their Schools, deliver to their Pupils all their Doctrines and Opinions by *Eructation*, wherein they had acquired a wonderful Eloquence, and of incredible Variety. But the great Characteristick, by which their chief Sages were best distinguished, was a certain Position of Countenance, which gave undoubted Intelligence to what Degree or Proportion, the Spirit agitated the inward Mass. For, after certain Gripings, the *Wind* and Vapours issuing forth, having first, by their Turbulence and Convulsions within, caused an Earthquake in Man's little World; distorted the Mouth, bloated the Cheeks, and gave the Eyes a terrible kind of *Relievo*. At which Junctures, all their *Belches* were received for Sacred, the sourer the better, and swallowed with infinite Consolation by their meager Devotees. And to render these yet more complete, because the Breath of Man's Life is in his Nostrils, therefore, the choicest, most edifying, and most enlivening *Belches* were very wisely conveyed through that Vehicle, to give them a Tincture as they passed.

THEIR Gods were the four *Winds*, whom they worshipped, as the Spirits that pervade and enliven the Universe, and as those from whom alone all *Inspiration* can properly be said to proceed. However, the Chief of these, to whom they performed the Adoration of *Latria*, was the *Almighty North*; an antient Deity, whom the Inhabitants of *Megalopolis* in *Greece*, had likewise
 * *Pausan.* in highest Reverence. * *Omnium De-*
 L. 8. *orum Boream maxime celebrant.* This

God, although endued with Ubiquity, was yet supposed by the profounder *Æolists* to possess one peculiar Habitation, or (to speak in Form) a *Cælum Empyræum*, wherein he was more intimately present. This was situated in a certain Region, well known to the Antient *Greeks*, by them called, *Σκωτία*, (*Scotia*) or the *Land of Darkness*. And although many Controversies have arisen upon that Matter; yet so much is undisputed, that from a Region of the like Denomination the most refined *Æolists* have borrowed their Original; from whence, in every Age, the zealous among their Priesthood, have brought over their choicest *Inspiration*, fetching it with their own Hands, from the Fountain Head, in certain *Bladders*, and discharging it among the Sectaries in all Nations, who did, and do, and ever will, daily Gasp and Pant after it.

Now, their Mysteries and Rites were performed in this Manner. It is well known among the Learned, that the Virtuosos of former Ages had a Contrivance for carrying and preserving *Winds* in Casks or Barrels, which was of great Assistance upon long Sea Voyages; and the Loss of so useful an Art at present is very much to be lamented, although I know not how, with great Negligence omitted by † *Pancirollus*. It was an Invention ascribed

* An Author who writ *De Artibus Perditis, &c.*
 † *of Arts lost, and of Arts invented.*

ascribed to *Æolus* himself, from whom this Sect is denominated, and who, in Honour of their Founder's Memory, have to this Day preserved great Numbers of those *Barrels*, whereof they fix one in each of their Temples, first beating out the Top; into this *Barrel*, upon Solemn Days; the Priest enters; where, having before duly prepared himself by the Methods already described, a secret Funnel is also conveyed from his Posteriors, to the Bottom of the *Barrel*, which admits new Supplies of Inspiration from a *Northern Chink* or *Crany*. Whereupon, you behold him swell immediately to the Shape and Size of his *Vessel*. In this Posture he disembogues whole Tempests upon his Auditory, as the Spirit from beneath gives him Utterance; which, issuing *ex adytis*, and *penetralibus*, is not performed without much Pain and Gripings. And the *Wind* breaking forth * deals with his Face, as it doth with that of the Sea; first *blackning*, then *wrinkling*, and, at last, *bursting it into a Foam*. It is in this Guise, the Sacred *Æolist* delivereth his oracular *Belches* to his panting Disciples: Of whom some are greedily gaping after the sanctified Breath; others are all the while hymning out the Praises of the *Winds*; and gently wasted to and fro by their own Humming, do thus represent the soft Breezes of their Deities appeased.

It is from this Custom of the Priests, that some Authors maintain these *Æolists* to have been very antient in the World. Because, the Delivery of their Mysteries, which I have just now mentioned, appeareth exactly the same with that of other antient Oracles, whose Inspirations were owing to certain subterraneous *Effluvioms* of *Wind*, delivered with the same Pain to the Priest, and much about the same Influence on the People. It is true indeed, that these were frequently managed and directed by

* This is an exact Description of the Changes made in the Face by Enthusiastick Preachers.

by *Female Officers*, whose Organs were understood to be better disposed for the Admission of those Oracular *Gusts*, as entering and passing up through a Receptacle of greater Capacity, and causing also a Pruriency by the Way, such as, with due Management, hath been refined from Carnal into a Spiritual Extasy. And to strengthen this profound Conjecture, it is farther insisted, that this Custom of * *Female Priests* is kept up still in certain refined Colleges of our *modern Æolists*, who are agreed to receive their Inspiration, derived through the Receptacle aforesaid, like their Ancestors, the *Sibyls*.

AND, whereas the Mind of Man, when he gives the Spur and Bridle to his Thoughts, doth never stop, but naturally sallies out into both Extreams of High and Low, of Good and Evil; His first Flight of Fancy commonly transports him to Ideas of what is most perfect, finished, and exalted; until having soared out of his own Reach and Sight, not well perceiving how near the Frontiers of Height and Depth border upon each other; with the same Course and Wing, he falleth down plum into the lowest Bottom of Things; like one who travels from the *East* into the *West*, or like a strait Line drawn by its own Length into a Circle. Whether, a Tincture of Malice in our Natures maketh us fond of furnishing every bright Idea with its Reverse; Or, whether Reason, reflecting upon the Sum of Things, can, like the Sun, serve only to enlighten one half of the Globe, leaving the other half, by Necessity, under Shade and Darkness; Or, whether Fancy, flying up to the Imagination of what is Highest and Best, becometh over-short, and spent, and weary, and suddenly falls, like a dead Bird of Paradise, to the Ground: Or, whether after all these *metaphysical* Conjectures,
I have

* *Quakers, who suffer their Women to preach and pray.*

I have not entirely missed the true Reason: The Proposition however, which hath stood me in so much Circumstance, is altogether true; That, as the most uncivilized Parts of Mankind have, some way or other, climbed up into the Conception of a God, or Supream Power, so they have seldom forgot to provide their Fears with certain ghastly Notions, which, instead of better, have served them pretty tolerably for a *Devil*. And this Proceeding seemeth to be natural enough; for it is with Men, whose Imaginations are lifted up very high, as with those, whose Bodies are so; that, as they are delighted with the Advantage of a nearer Contemplation upwards, so they are equally terrified with the dismal Prospect of the Precipice below. Thus, in the Choice of a *Devil*, it hath been the usual Method of Mankind to single out some Being, either in Act, or in Vision, which was in most Antipathy to the God they had framed. Thus also the Sect of *Æolists* possessed themselves with a Dread, and Horror, and Hatred of two Malignant Natures, betwixt whom, and the Deities they adored, perpetual Enmity was established. The first of these was the * *Camelion*, sworn Foe to Inspiration, who in Scorn devoured large Influences of the God; without refunding the smallest Blast by *Eruetation*. The other was a huge terrible Monster, called *Moulinavent*, who, with four strong Arms, waged eternal Battle with all their Divinities, dextrously turning to avoid their Blows, and repay them with Interest.

THUS furnished, and set out with Gods, as well as Devils, was the renowned Sect of *Æolists*, which maketh at this Day so illustrious a Figure in the World, and whereof that Polite Nation of *Laplanders*

* I do not well understand what the Author aims at here, any more than by the terrible Monster, mentioned in the following Lines, called *Moulinavent*, which is the French Word for a Windmill.

landers are, beyond all Doubt, a most authentick Branch; of whom I therefore cannot, without Injustice, here omit to make honourable Mention; since they appear to be so closely allied in Point of Interest, as well as Inclinations, with their Brother *Æolists* among Us, as not only to buy their *Winds* by wholesale from the *same* Merchants, but also to retail them after the *same* Rate and Method, and to Customers much alike.

Now, whether the System here delivered was wholly compiled by *Jack*, or, as some Writers believe, rather copied from the Original at *Delphos*, with certain Additions and Emendations suited to Times and Circumstances, I shall not absolutely determine. This I may affirm, that *Jack* gave it at least a new Turn, and formed it into the same Dress and Model, as it lies deduced by me.

I have long sought after this Opportunity of doing Justice to a Society of Men, for whom I have a peculiar Honour, and whose Opinions, as well as Practices, have been extremely misrepresented, and traduced by the Malice or Ignorance of their Adversaries. For, I think it one of the greatest, and best of human Actions, to remove Prejudices, and place Things in their truest and fairest Light; which I therefore boldly undertake without any Regards of my own, beside the Conscience, the Honour, and the Thanks,

S E C T.

S E C T. IX.

A DIGRESSION concerning the Original, the Use, and Improvement of MADNESS in a Commonwealth.

NOR shall it any ways detract from the just Reputation of this famous Sect, that its Rise and Institution are owing to such an Author as I have described *Jack* to be: A Person, whose Intellectuals were overturned, and his Brain shaken out of its natural Position; which we commonly suppose to be a Distemper, and called by the Name of *Madness* or *Phrenzy*. For, if we take a Survey of the greatest Actions that have been performed in the World, under the Influence of Single Men; which are, *The Establishment of New Empires by Conquest: the Advance and Progress of new Schemes in Philosophy; and the contriving, as well as the propagating of New Religions*; We shall find the Authors of them all to have been Persons, whose natural Reason hath admitted great Revolutions from their Diet, their Education, the Prevalency of some certain Temper, together with the particular Influence of Air and Climate. Besides, there is something Individual in human Minds, that easily kindles at the accidental Approach and Collision of certain Circumstances, which, although of paultry and mean Appearance, do often flame out into the greatest Emergencies of Life. For, great Turns are not always given by strong Hands, but by lucky Adaption, and at proper Seasons; and it is of no Import, where the Fire was kindled, if the Vapour hath once got up into the Brain. For, the *upper Region* of Man is furnished like the *middle Region* of the Air; the Materials are formed from Causes of the widest Difference, yet produce at last the same Substance and Effects. Mists arise from the Earth, Steams from Dunghils, Exhalations

tions from the Sea, and Smoak from Fire; yet all Clouds are the same in Composition, as well as Consequences: And the Fumes, issuing from a Jakes, will furnish as comely and useful a Vapour, as Incense from an Altar. Thus far, I suppose, will easily be granted me; and then it will follow, that as the Face of Nature never produceth Rain, but when it is overcast and disturbed, so Human Understanding, seated in the Brain, must be troubled and overspread by Vapours, ascending from the lower Faculties, to water the Invention, and render it fruitful. Now, although these Vapours (as it hath been already said) are of as various Original, as those of the Skies, yet the Crops they produce, differ both in Kind and Degree, meerly according to the Soil. I will produce two Instances to Prove and Explain what I am now advancing.

* A CERTAIN Great Prince raised a mighty Army, filled his Coffers with infinite Treasures, provided an invincible Fleet, and all this, without giving the least Part of his Design to his greatest Ministers, or his nearest Favourites. Immediately the whole World was alarmed; the neighbouring Crowns, in trembling Expectations, towards what Point the Storm would burst; the small Politicians every where forming profound Conjectures. Some believed he had laid a Scheme for Universal Monarchy: Others, after much Insight, determined the Matter to be a Project for pulling down the *Pope*, and setting up the *Reformed Religion*, which had once been his own. Some, again, of a deeper Sagacity, sent him into *Asia* to subdue the *Turk*, and recover *Palestine*. In the midst of all these Projects and Preparations, a certain † *State-Surgeon*, gathering the Nature of the Disease by these Symptoms,

* This was Harry the Great, of France.

† Ravillac, who stabbed Henry the Great in his Coach.

Symptoms, attempted the Cure, at one Blow performed the Operation, broke the Bag, and out flew the *Vapour*; nor did any Thing want to render it a compleat Remedy; only, that the Prince unfortunately happened to Die in the Performance.

Now, is the Reader exceeding curious to learn, from whence this *Vapour* took its Rise, which had so long set the Nations at a Gaze? What secret Wheel, what hidden Spring could put into Motion so wonderful an Engine? It was afterwards discovered, that the Movement of this whole Machine had been directed by an absent *Female*, whose Eyes had raised a Protuberancy, and, before Emifion, she was removed into an Enemy's Country. What should an unhappy Prince do in such ticklish Circumstances as these? He tried in vain the Poet's never-failing Receipt of *Corpora quæque*; For,

*Idque petit Corpus mens unde est saucia amore;
Unde feritur, eo tendit, gestitque coire.* Lucr.

HAVING to no Purpose used all peaceable Endeavours, the collected Part of the *Semen*, raised and enflamed, became adust, converted to Choler, turned Head upon the spinal Duct, and ascended to the Brain. The very same Principle, that influences a *Bully* to break the Windows of a Whore who hath jilted him, naturally stirs up a great Prince to raise mighty Armies, and dream of nothing but Sieges, Battles, and Victories.

----- *Teterrima belli
Causa*-----

THE other * Instance is, what I have read somewhere, in a very ancient Author, of a mighty King, who, for the Space of above Thirty Years,
I amused

* This is meant of the late French King, Lewis XIV.

amused himself to take and lose Towns; beat Armies, and be beaten; drive Princes out of their Dominions; fright Children from their Bread and Butter; burn, lay waste, plunder, dragoon, massacre Subject and Stranger, Friend and Foe, Male and Female. It is recorded, that the Philosophers of each Country were in grave Dispute, upon Causes Natural, Moral, and Political, to find out where they should assign an original Solution of this *Phænomenon*. At last, the *Vapour* or *Spirit* which animated the Hero's Brain, being in perpetual Circulation, seized upon that Region of Human Body, so renowned for furnishing the * *Zibeta Occidentalis*, and, gathering there into a Tumour, left the rest of the World for that Time in Peace. Of such mighty Consequence it is, where those Exhalations fix; and of so little, from whence they proceed. The same Spirits, which in their superior Progress would conquer a Kingdom, descending upon the *Anus*, conclude in a *Fistula*.

LET us next examine the great Introducers of new Schemes in Philosophy, and search until we can find, from what Faculty of the Soul the Disposition ariseth in mortal Man, of taking it into his Head, to advance new Systems with such an eager Zeal, in Things agreed on all Hands impossible to be known; from what Seeds this Disposition springs, and to what Quality of Human Nature these grand Innovators have been indebted for their Number of Disciples. Because, it is plain, that several of the chief among them, both *Antient* and *Modern*, were usually mistaken by their Adversaries, and indeed by all, except their own Followers,

* Paracelsus, who was so famous for Chymistry, tried an Experiment upon human Excrement to make a Perfume of it, which when he had brought to Perfection, he called *Zibeta Occidentalis*, or Western-Civet, the back Parts of Man (according to his Division mentioned by the Author, Page 160.) being the West.

Followers; to have been Persons Crazed, or out of their Wits, having generally proceeded in the common Course of their Words and Actions, by a Method very different from the vulgar Dictates of *unrefined* Reason: Agreeing for the most Part in their several Models, with their present undoubted Successors in the *Academy of modern Bedlam*, (whose Merits and Principles I shall farther examine in due Place.) Of this Kind were *Epicurus*, *Diogenes*, *Apollonius*, *Lucretius*, *Paracelsus*, *Des Cartes*, and others; who, if they were now in the World, tied fast, and separate from their Followers, would, in this our undistinguishing Age, incur manifest Danger of *Plebotomy*, and *Whips*, and *Chains*, and *dark Chambers*, and *Straw*. For, what Man in the natural State, or Course of Thinking, did ever conceive it in his Power, to reduce the Notions of all Mankind exactly to the same Length, and Breadth, and Height of his own; Yet this is the first humble and civil Design of all Innovators in the Empire of Reason. *Epicurus* modestly hoped, that, one Time or other, a certain Fortuitous Concurrence of all Mens Opinion, after perpetual Justlings, the sharp with the smooth, the light and the heavy, the round and the square, would, by certain *Clinamina*, unite in the Notions of *Atoms* and *Void*, as these did in the Originals of all Things. *Cartesius* reckoned to see before he died the Sentiments of all Philosophers, like so many lesser Stars in his *Romantick* System, rapt and drawn within his own *Vortex*. Now, I would gladly be informed, how it is possible to account for such Imaginations as these in particular Men, without Recourse to my *Phænomenon* of *Vapours*, ascending from the lower Faculties, to overshadow the Brain, and there distilling into Conceptions, for which the Narrowness of our Mother-tongue hath not yet assigned any other Name, besides that of *Madness* or *Phrenzy*. Let us therefore now conjecture how it cometh to pass, that none of these great Prescribers do ever

fail providing themselves and their Notions, with a Number of implicit Disciples. And, I think, the Reason is easy to be assigned: For, there is a peculiar *String* in the Harmony of Human Understanding, which in several Individuals is exactly of the same Tuning. This if you can dexterously skrew up to its right Key, and then strike gently upon it; whenever you have the good Fortune to light among those of the same Pitch, they will, by a secret necessary Sympathy, strike exactly at the same Time. And in this one Circumstance lies all the Skill or Luck of the Matter; for if you chance to jar the String among those who are either above or below your own Height, instead of subscribing to your Doctrine, they will tie you fast, call you mad, and feed you with Bread and Water. It is therefore a Point of the nicest Conduct to distinguish and adapt this noble Talent, with respect to the Difference of Persons and of Times. *Cicero* understood this very well, when writing to a Friend in *England*, with a Caution, among other Matters, to beware of being cheated by our *Hackney-coachmen* (who, it seems, in those Days were as arrant Rascals as they are now) he has

* *Epist. ad Fam. Treba-* these remarkable Words * *Est quod gaudeas te in ista loca venisse, ubi aliquid sapere viderere.* For, to speak a bold Truth, it is a fatal Miscarriage,

so ill to order Affairs, as to pass for a Fool in one Company, when in another you might be treated as a *Philosopher*, Which I desire *some certain Gentlemen of my Acquaintance*, to lay up in their Hearts, as a very seasonable *Innuendo*.

THIS, indeed, was the Fatal Mistake of that worthy Gentleman, my most ingenious Friend, *Mr. Wotton*; a Person, in Appearance, ordained for great Designs, as well as Performances; whether you will consider his *Notions* or his *Looks*. Surely, no Man ever advanced into the Publick with fitter Qualifications of Body and Mind, for the

the Propagation of a new Religion. Oh, had those happy Talents, misapplied to vain Philosophy, been turned into their proper Channels of *Dreams* and *Visions*, where *Distortion* of Mind and Countenance is of such Sovereign Use; the base detracting World would not then have dared to report, that something is amiss; that his Brain hath undergone an unlucky Shake; which even his Brother *Modernists* themselves, like Ungrates, do whisper so loud, that it reacheth up to the very Garret I am now writing in.

LASTLY, Whosoever pleaseth to look into the Fountains of *Enthusiasm*, from whence, in all Ages, have eternally proceeded such fatening Streams, will find the Spring-head to have been as *troubled* and *muddy* as the Current; Of such great Emolument is a Tincture of this *Vapour*, which the World calleth *Madness*, that without its Help the World would not only be deprived of those two great Blessings, *Conquests* and *Systems*, but even all Mankind would happily be reduced to the same Belief in Things invisible. Now, the former *Postulatum* being held, that it is of no Import from what Originals this *Vapour* proceedeth, but either in what *Angles* it striketh and spreadeth over the Understanding, or upon what *Species* of Brain it ascendeth; It will be a very delicate Point, to cut the Feather, and divide the several Reasons to a nice and curious Reader, how this numerical Difference in the Brain can produce Effects of so vast a Difference from the same *Vapour*, as to be the sole Point of Individuation between *Alexander the Great*, *Jack of Leyden*, and *Monsieur Des Cartes*. The present Argument is the most abstracted that ever I engaged in, it straineth my Faculties to their highest Stretch; and I desire the Reader to attend with utmost Propensity; For, I now proceed to unravel this knotty Point.

* THERE is in Mankind a certain

Hic multa desiderantur.

* * * And this I take to be a clear Solution of the Matter.

HAVING therefore so narrowly passed through this intricate Difficulty, the Reader will, I am sure, agree with me in the Conclusion; that if the *Moderns* mean by *Madness* only a Disturbance or Transposition of the Brain, by Force of certain *Vapours* issuing from the lower Faculties; Then has this *Madness* been the Parent of all those mighty Revolutions that have happened in *Empire*, in *Philosophy*, and in *Religion*. For, the Brain, in its natural Position and State of Serenity, disposeth its Owner to pass his Life in the common Forms, without any Thought of subduing Multitudes to his own *Power*, his *Reasons*, or his *Visions*; and the more he shapeth his Understanding by the Pattern of Human Learning, the less he is inclined to form Parties after his particular Notions; because that instructeth him in his private Infirmities, as well as in the stubborn Ignorance of the People. But when a Man's Fancy gets *astride* on his Reason, when Imagination is at Cuffs with the Senses, and common Understanding, as well as common Sense, is kicked out of Doors; the first Proselyte he maketh, is Himself, and when that is once compassed, the Difficulty is not so great in bringing over others; A strong Delusion always operating from *without*, as vigorously as from *within*. For,
Cant

* Here is another Defect in the Manuscript; but I think the Author did wisely, and that the Matter, which thus strained his Faculties, was not worth a Solution; and it were well, if all Metaphysical Cobweb Problems were no otherwise answered.

Cant and Vision are to the Ear and the Eye, the same that Tickling is to the Touch. Those Entertainments and Pleasures we most value in Life, are such as *Dupe* and play the Wag with the Senses. For, if we take an Examination of what is generally understood by *Happiness*, as it hath Respect, either to the Understanding or the Senses, we shall find all its Properties and Adjuncts will herd under this short Definition: That, *it is a perpetual Possession of being well Deceived*. And first, with Relation to the Mind or Understanding; it is manifest, what mighty Advantages Fiction hath over Truth; and the Reason is just at our Elbow; because Imagination can build nobler Scenes, and produce more wonderful Revolutions than Fortune or Nature will be at Expence to furnish. Nor is Mankind so much to blame in his Choice, thus determining him, if we consider that the Debate merely lies between *Things past*, and *Things conceived*; and so the Question is only this; Whether Things, that have Place in the *Imagination*, may not as properly be said to *Exist*, as those that are seated in the *Memory*; which may be justly held in the Affirmative, and very much to the Advantage of the former, since this is acknowledged to be the *Womb* of Things, and the other allowed to be no more than the *Grave*. Again, if we take this Definition of Happiness, and examine it with Reference to the Senses, it will be acknowledged wonderfully adapt. How fading and insipid do all Objects accost us that are not conveyed in the Vehicle of *Delusion*? How shrunk is every Thing, as it appears in the Glass of Nature. So, that if it were not for the Assistance of artificial *Mediums*, false Lights, refracted Angles, Varnish, and Tinsel; there would be a mighty Level in the Felicity and Enjoyments of Mortal Men. If this were seriously considered by the World, as I have a certain Reason to suspect it hardly will; Men would no longer reckon among their high Points of Wisdom the Art of exposing

weak

weak Sides, and publishing Infirmities; an Employment in my Opinion, neither better nor worse than that of *Unmasking*, which, I think, hath never been allowed fair Usage, either in the *World* or the *Playhouse*.

IN the Proportion that Credulity is a more peaceful Possession of the Mind than Curiosity, so far preferable is that Wisdom, which converseth about the Surface, to that pretended Philosophy, which enters into the Depth of Things, and then comes gravely back with Informations and Discoveries, that in the Inside they are good for nothing. The two Senses, to which all Objects first address themselves, are the Sight and the Touch; these never examine farther than the Colour, the Shape, the Size, and whatever other Qualities dwell, or are drawn by Art upon the outward Bodies; and then cometh Reason officiously, with Tools for cutting, and opening, and mangling, and piercing, offering to demonstrate, that they are not of the same Consistence quite through. Now I take all this to be the last Degree of perverting Nature; one of whose Eternal Laws it is, to put her best Furniture forward. And therefore, in order to save the Charges of all such expensive Anatomy for the Time to come; I do here think fit to inform the Reader, that in such Conclusions as these; Reason is certainly in the Right; and that in most Corporeal Beings, which have fallen under my Cognizance, the *Outside* hath been infinitely preferable to the *In*: Whereof I have been farther convinced from some late Experiments. Last Week I saw a Woman *flayed*, and you will hardly believe how much it altered her Person for the worse. Yesterday I ordered the Carcase of a *Beau* to be stript in my Presence, when we were all amazed to find so many unsuspected Faults under one Suit of Cloaths: Then I laid open his *Brain*, his *Heart*, and his *Spleen*; But, I plainly perceived at every Operation, that the farther we proceeded, we found the

Defects

Defects encrease upon us in Number, and Bulk: From all which I justly formed this Conclusion to myself; that whatever Philosopher or Projector can find out an Art to solder and patch up the Flaws and Imperfections of Nature, will deserve much better of Mankind, and teach us a more useful Science, than that, so much in present Esteem, of widening and exposing them (like him who held *Anatomy* to be the ultimate End of *Physick*) and he, whose Fortunes and Dispositions have placed him in a convenient Station to enjoy the Fruits of this noble Art; He that can with *Epicurus* content his Ideas with the *Films* and *Images* that fly off upon his Senses from the *Superficies* of Things; Such a Man, truly wise, draineth off Nature, leaving the Sour and the Dregs, for Philosophy and Reason to lap up. This is the sublime and refined Point of Felicity, called, *the Possession of being well deceived*: the Serene, Peaceful State of being a Fool among Knaves.

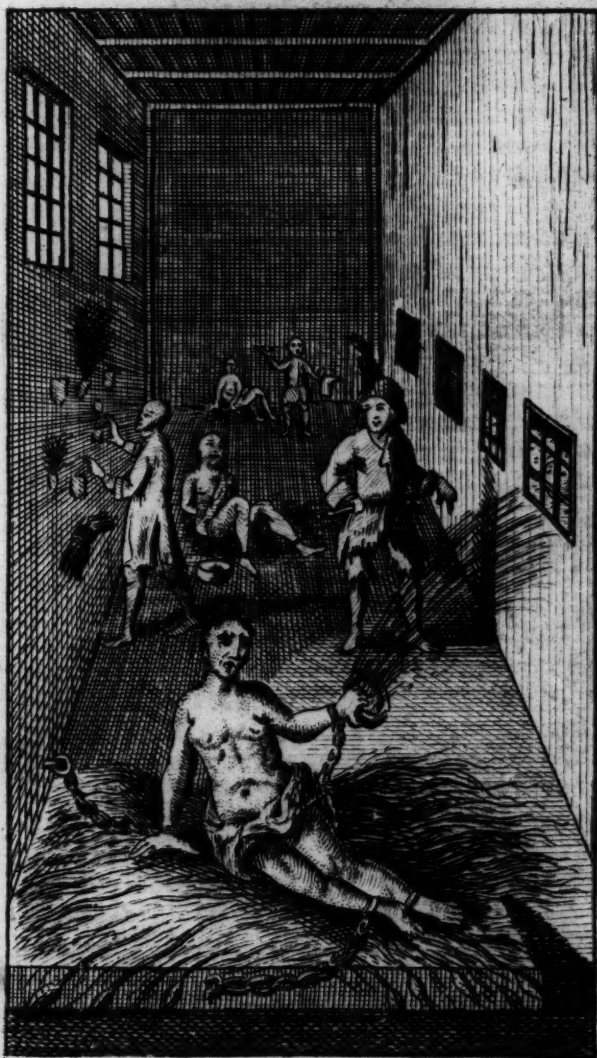
BUT to return to *Madness*. It is certain, that, according to the System I have above deduced; every *Species* thereof proceedeth from a Redundancy of *Vapours*; therefore, as some Kinds of *Phrenzy* give double Strength to the Sinews, so there are of other *Species*, which add Vigour, and Life, and Spirit to the Brain: Now, it usually happens, that these active Spirits, getting Possession of the Brain, resemble those that haunt other waste and empty Dwellings, which, for want of Business, either vanish, and carry away a Piece of the House, or else stay at home and fling it all out of the Windows. By which are mystically displayed the two principal Branches of *Madness*, and which some Philosophers, not considering so well as I, have mistook to be different in their Causes, overhastily assigning the first to Deficiency, and the other to Redundance.

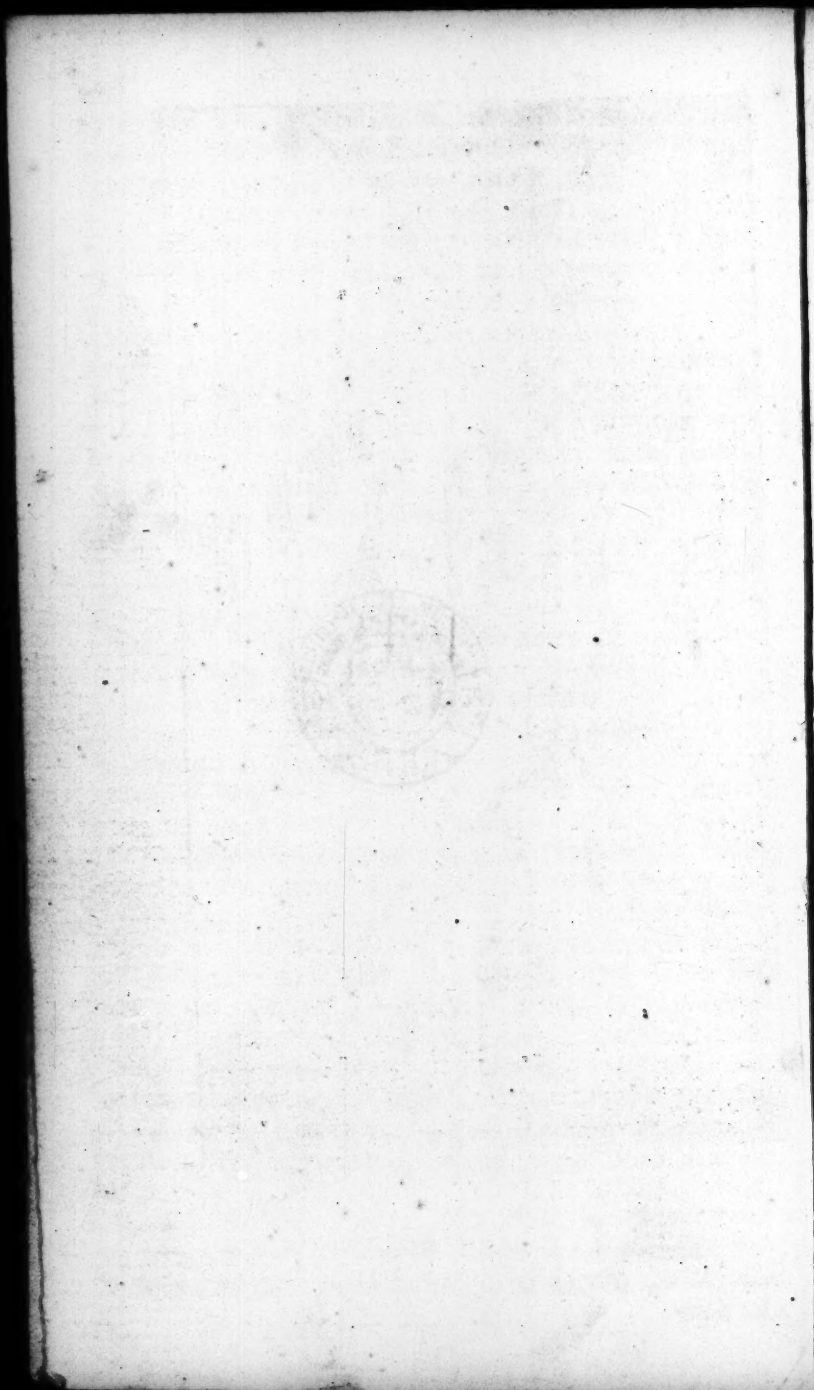
I THINK it therefore manifest, from what I have here advanced, that the main Point of Skill and
Address

Address is to furnish Employment for this Redundancy of *Vapour*, and prudently to adjust the Season of it; by which Means it may certainly become of Cardinal and Catholick Emolument in a Common-wealth. Thus one Man, chusing a proper Juncture, leapeth into a Gulph, from whence proceedeth a Hero, and is called the Saver of his Country; Another atchieves the same Enterprize, but, unluckily Timing it, hath left the Brand of *Madness*, fixed as a Reproach upon his Memory; Upon so nice a Distinction are we taught to repeat the Name of *Curtius* with Reverence and Love; that of *Empedocles* with Hatred and Contempt. Thus, also it is usually conceived, that the Elder *Brutus* only personated the *Fool* and *Madman*, for the Good of the Publick: But this was nothing else, than a Redundancy of the same *Vapour*, long misapplied, called by the *Latins*,

* *Tacit.* * *Ingenium par negotiis*: Or, (to translate it as nearly as I can) a Sort of *Pbrenzy*, never in its right Element, until you take it up in Business of the State.

UPON all which, and many other Reasons of equal Weight, although not equally curious; I do here gladly embrace an Opportunity I have long sought for, of recommending it as a very noble Undertaking, to Sir *Edward Seymor*, Sir *Christopher Musgrave*, Sir *J---n B----ls*, *John How*, Esq; and other Patriots concerned, that they would move for Leave to bring in a Bill, for appointing Commissioners to inspect into *Bedlam*, and the Parts adjacent; who shall be empowered to *send for Persons, Papers, and Records*: To examine into the Merits and Qualifications of every Student and Professor; to observe with utmost Exactness their several Dispositions and Behaviour; by which Means, duly distinguishing and adapting their Talents, they might produce admirable Instruments for the several Offices in a State, *Ecclesiastical, Civil, and Military*;





1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

litary; proceeding in such Methods as I shall here humbly propose: And, I hope, the Gentle Reader will give some Allowance to my great Solitudes in this important Affair, upon Account of the high Esteem I have ever born that honourable Society, whereof I had some time the Happiness to be an unworthy Member.

Is any Student tearing his Straw in piece-meal, swearing and blaspheming, biting his Grate, foaming at the Mouth, and emptying his Pisspot in the Spectator's Faces? Let the Right Worshipful, the *Commissioners of Inspection* give him a Regiment of Dragoons, and send him into *Flanders* among the *Rest*. Is another eternally talking, sputtering, gaping, bawling, in a Sound without Period or Article? What wonderful Talents are here misapplied! Let him be furnished immediately with a green Bag and Papers, † *A Law- and † three Pence* in his Pocket, and *yer's Coach-* away with him to *Westminster-Hall*. *Hire*.

You will find a Third, gravely taking the Dimensions of his Kennel; a Person of Foresight and Insight, although kept quite in the Dark; for why, like *Moses*, *Ecce * cornuta erat ejus facies*. He walketh duly in one Pace, intreateth your Penny with due Gravity and Ceremony; talketh much of hard Times, and Taxes, and the *Whore of Babylon*; Bars up the wooden Window of his Cell constantly at eight of the Clock: Dreams of *Fire*, and *Shoplifters*, and *Court-Customers*, and *privileged Places*. Now what a Figure would all these Acquirements amount to, if the Owner were sent into the *City* among his Brethren! Behold a Fourth, in much and deep Conversation with himself, biting his Thumbs at proper Junctures; his Countenance

* *Cornutus*, is either horned or shining, and by this Term, *Moses* is described in the vulgar Latin of the Bible.

nance chequered with Business and Design: sometimes walking very fast, with his Eyes nailed to a Paper that he holdeth in his Hands: A great Saver of Time, somewhat thick of Hearing, very short of Sight, but more of Memory. A Man ever in Haste; a great Hatcher and Breeder of Business, and excellent at the famous Art of *whispering Nothing*. A huge Idolater of Monosyllables and Procrastination; so ready to *Give* his Word to every Body, that he never *keeps* it. One that hath forgot the common *Meaning* of Words, but an admirable Retainer of the *Sound*. Extremely subject to the *Loosness*, for his *Occasions* are perpetually *calling him away*. If you approach his Grate in his familiar Intervals; *Sir*, says he, *Give me a Penny, and I'll sing you a Song: But give me the Penny first*. (Hence comes the common Saying, and commoner Practice of parting with Money for a *Song*.) What a complete System of *Court-skill* is here described in every Branch of it, and all utterly lost with wrong Application? Accost the Hole of another Kennel, (first stopping your Nose,) you will behold a surly, gloomy, nasty, slovenly Mortal, raking in his own Dung, and dabling in his Urine. The best Part of his Diet is the Reversion of his own Ordure, which, expiring into Steams, whirleth perpetually about; and at last reinfundeth. His Complexion is of a dirty Yellow, with a thin scattered Beard, exactly agreeable to that of his Dyet upon its first Declination; like other Insects, who, having their Birth and Education in an Excrement, from thence borrow their Colour and their Smell. The Student of this Apartment is very sparing of his Words, but somewhat over-liberal of his Breath; he holdeth his Hand out ready to receive your Penny, and immediately, upon Receipt, withdraws to his former Occupations. Now is it not amazing to think, the Society of *Warwick-lane* should have no more Concern for the Recovery of so useful a Member;

Member; who, if one may judge from these Appearances, would become the greatest Ornament to that illustrious Body? Another Student strutteth up fiercely to your Teeth, puffing with his Lips, half squeezing out his Eyes, and very graciously holdeth you out his Hand to kifs. The *Keeper* desires you not to be afraid of this Professor, for he will do you no Hurt: To him alone is allowed the Liberty of the Anti-chamber, and the *Orator* of the Place gives you to understand, that this solemn Person is a *Taylor* run mad with Pride. This considerable Student is adorned with many other Qualities, upon which, at present, I shall not farther enlarge. - - - - - * *Hark in your Ear* - - - - - I am strangely mistaken, if all his Address, his Motions, and his Airs, would not then be very natural, and in their proper Element.

I SHALL not descend so minutely, as to insist upon the vast Number of *Beaux*, *Fidlers*, *Poets*, and *Politicians*, that the World might recover by such a Reformation? But what is more material, besides the clear Gain redounding to the Commonwealth, by so large an Acquisition of Persons to employ, whose Talents and Acquirements, if I may be so bold to affirm it, are now buried, or at least misapplied: It would be a mighty Advantage accruing to the Publick from this Enquiry, that all these would very much excel, and arrive at great Perfection in their several Kinds; which, I think, is manifest from what I have already shewn, and shall inforce by this one plain Instance; that, even I myself, the Author of these momentous Truths, am a Person, whose Imaginations are hard-mouthed, and exceedingly disposed to run away with his *Reason*, which I have observed from long Expe-

K

rience

* *I cannot conjecture what the Author means here, or how this Chasm could be filled, although it is capable of more than one Interpretation.*

rience, to be a very light Rider, and easily shook off: upon which Account, my Friends will never trust me alone without a solemn Promise, to vent my Speculations in this, or the like Manner, for the universal Benefit of human kind; which, perhaps, the gentle, courteous, and candid Reader, brimful of that *modern* Charity and Tendernefs, usually annexed to his *Office*, will be very hardly persuaded to believe.

S E C T. X.

A T A L E of a T U B.

IT is an unanswerable Argument of a very refined Age, the wonderful Civilities that have passed of late Years between the Nation of *Authors*, and that of Readers. There can hardly * pop out a *Play*, a *Pamphlet*, or a *Poem*, without a Preface full of Acknowledgment to the World, for the general Reception and Applause they have given it, which the Lord knows where, or when, or how, or from whom it was received. In due Deference to so laudable a Custom, I do here return my humble Thanks to *His Majesty* and both Houses of *Parliament*; to the *Lords* of the King's most honourable Privy Council; to the Reverend the *Judges*; to the *Clergy*, and *Gentry*, and *Yeomanry* of this Land; But in a more especial Manner, to my worthy Brethren and Friends at *Will's Coffee-house*, and *Gresham College*, and *Warwick-lane*, and *Moor-fields*, and *Scotland-yard*, and *Westminster-Hall*, and *Guild-hall*: In short, to all Inhabitants and Retainers whatsoever, either in Court, or Church, or Camp, or City, or Country; for their generous and universal Acceptance of this divine Treatise. I accept their Approbation and good Opinion with extream Gratitude, and, to the utmost of my poor Capacity, shall take hold of all Opportunities to return the Obligation.

I AM also happy, that Fate hath flung me into so blessed an Age for the mutual Felicity of *Book-sellers* and *Authors*, whom I may safely affirm to be

K 2

at

* This is literally true, as we may observe in the Prefaces to most Plays, Poems, &c.

at this Day the only two satisfied Parties in England. Ask an Author how his last Piece hath succeeded? Why truly, he thanks his Stars, the World has been very favourable, and he has not the least Reason to complain: And yet, by G--, he wrote it in a Week, at Bits and Starts, when he could steal an Hour from his urgent Affairs; as it is a hundred to one, you may see farther in the Preface, to which he refers you; and for the rest, to the Bookseller. There you go as a Customer, and make the same Question: He blesses his God, the Thing takes wonderfully; he is just printing a second Edition, and has but Three left in his Shop. You beat down the Price: Sir, we shall not differ; and in Hopes of your Custom another Time, lets you have it as reasonable as you please: And, pray send as many of your Acquaintance as you will, I shall, upon your Account, furnish them all at the same Rate.

Now, it is not well enough considered to what Accidents and Occasions the World is indebted for the greatest Part of those noble Writings, which hourly start up to entertain it. If it were not for a rainy Day, a drunken Vigil, a Fit of the Spleen, a Course of Physick, a sleepy Sunday, an ill Run at Dice, a long Taylor's Bill, a Beggar's Purse, a factious Head, a hot Sun, costive Diet, want of Books, and a just Contempt of Learning. But for these Events, I say, and some others too long to recite (especially a prudent Neglect of taking Brimstone inwardly) I doubt, the Number of Authors and of Writings would dwindle away to a Degree most woful to behold. To confirm this Opinion, hear the Words of the famous Troglodyte Philosopher: It is certain (said he) some Grains of Folly are of course annexed, as part of the Composition of human Nature, only the Choice is left us, whether we please to wear them Inlaid or Embossed; and we need not go very far to seek how that is usually determined, when we remember, it is with
human

human Faculties as with Liquors, the lightest will be ever at the Top.

THERE is in this famous Island of Britain a certain paltry *Scribler*, very voluminous, whose Character the Reader cannot wholly be a Stranger to. He deals in a pernicious Kind of Writings, called *Second Parts*, and usually passeth under the Name of *The Author of the First*. I easily foresee, that as soon as I lay down my Pen, this nimble *Operator* will have stole it, and treat me as inhumanly as he hath already done Dr. *Bl---re*, *L---ge*, and many others who shall here be nameless: I therefore fly for Justice and Relief into the Hands of that great *Rectifier of Saddles*, and *Lover of Mankind*, Dr. *B---ly*, begging he will take this enormous Grievance into his most *modern* Consideration: And if it should so happen, that the *Furniture of an Ass*, in the Shape of a *Second Part*, must for my Sins be clapt, by a Mistake, upon my Back, that he will immediately please, in the Presence of the World, to lighten me of the Burthen, and take it home to *his own House*, till the *true Beast* thinks fit to call for it.

IN the mean time, I do here give this publick Notice, that my Resolutions are, to circumscribe within this Discourse the whole Stock of Matter I have been so many Years providing. Since my *Vein* is once opened, I am content to exhaust it all at a Running, for the peculiar Advantage of my dear Country, and for the universal Benefit of Mankind. Therefore hospitably considering the Number of my Guests, they shall have my whole Entertainment at a Meal; and I scorn to set up the *Leavings* in the Cupboard. What the *Guests* cannot eat may be given to the *Poor*, and the * *Dogs* under the Table

K 3

may

* By *Dogs*, the Author means common injudicious Criticks, as he explains it himself before, in his Digression upon Criticks (Page 39.)

may gnaw the *Bones*. This I understand for a more generous Proceeding, than to turn the Company's Stomach, by inviting them again To-morrow to a scurvy Meal of *Scraps*.

IF the Reader fairly considers the Strength of what I have advanced in the foregoing Section, I am convinced it will produce a wonderful Revolution in his Notions and Opinions; and he will be abundantly better prepared to receive and to relish the concluding Part of this miraculous Treatise. Readers may be divided into three Classes, the *Superficial*, the *Ignorant*, and the *Learned*: And I have with much Felicity fitted my Pen to the Genius and Advantage of each. The *Superficial* Reader will be strangely provoked to *Laughter*; which clears the Breast and the Lungs, is Sovereign against the *Spleen*, and the most innocent of all *Diureticks*. The *Ignorant* Reader (between whom and the former the Distinction is extreamly nice) will find himself disposed to *stare*; which is an admirable Remedy for ill Eyes, serveth to raise and enliven the Spirits, and wonderfully helps *Perspiration*. But the Reader truly *Learned*, chiefly for whose Benefit I wake when others sleep, and sleep when others wake, will here find sufficient Matter to employ his Speculations for the rest of his Life. It were much to be wished, and I do here humbly propose for an Experiment, that every Prince in *Christendom* will take seven of the *deepest* Scholars in his Dominions, and shut them up close for *seven* Years, in *seven* Chambers, with a Command to write *seven* ample Commentaries on this comprehensive Discourse. I shall venture to affirm, that whatever Difference may be found in their several Conjectures, they will be all, without the least Distortion, manifestly deducible from the Text. Mean time, it is my earnest Request, that so useful an Undertaking may be entered upon (if their Majesties please) with all convenient Speed; because I have a strong Inclination, before I leave
the

the World, to taste a Blessing, which we *mysterious* Writers can seldom reach till we have got into our Graves. Whether it is, that *Fame*, being a Fruit grafted on the Body, can hardly grow, and much less ripen, till the *Stock* is in the Earth; or, whether she be a Bird of Prey, and is lured among the rest to pursue after the Scent of a *Carcass*; or, whether she conceiveth her Trumpet soundeth best and farthest when she standeth on a *Tomb*, by the Advantage of a rising Ground, and the Echo of a hollow Vault.

IT is true, indeed, the Republick of *dark* Authors, after they once found out this excellent Expedient of *Dying*, have been peculiarly happy in the Variety as well as Extent of their Reputation. For, *Night* being the universal Mother of Things, wise Philosophers hold all Writings to be *fruitful* in the Proportion they are *dark*: And therefore the * *true illuminated* (that is to say, * *A Name* the *Darkest* of all) have met with such *of the* Rosy-numberless Commentators, whose *School* crucians. *lastick* Midwifry hath delivered them of Meanings, that the Authors themselves, perhaps, never conceived, and yet may very justly be allowed the lawful Parents of them: * The Words of such Writers being like Seed, which, however scattered at Random, when they light upon a fruitful Ground, will multiply far beyond either the Hopes or Imagination of the Sower.

AND therefore, in order to promote so useful a Work, I will here take Leave to glance a few *Innuendos*, that may be of great Assistance to those sublime Spirits, who shall be appointed to labour in an universal Comment upon this wonderful Discourse. And, First, † I have couched a very profound Mystery

* Nothing is more frequent than for Commentators to force Interpretations, which the Author never meant.

† This is what the Cabbalists among the Jews have done

stery in the Number of O's multiplied by *Seven*, and divided by *Nine*. Also, if a devout Brother of the *Rosy Cross* will pray fervently for sixty-three Mornings, with a lively Faith, and then transpose certain Letters and Syllables according to Prescription, in the second and fifth Section; they will certainly reveal into a full Receipt of the *Opus Magnum*. Lastly, whoever will be at the Pains to calculate the whole Number of each Letter in this Treatise, and sum up the Difference exactly between the several Numbers, assigning the true natural Cause for every such Difference; the Discoveries in the Product will plentifully reward his Labour. But then he must beware of † *Bythus* and *Sige*, and be sure not to forget the Qualities of * *Acamoth*; *A cujus lacrymis humecta*

done with the Bible, and pretend to find wonderful Mysteries by it.

† I was told by an eminent Divine, whom I consulted on this Point, that these two barbarous Words, with that of *Acamoth* and its Qualities, as here set down, are quoted from *Irenæus*. This he discovered by searching that antient Writer for another Quotation of our Author, which he hath placed in the Title Page, and refers to the Book and Chapter; the Curious were very inquisitive, whether those barbarous Words, *Basima Eacabasa*, &c. are really in *Irenæus*, and upon Enquiry it was found, they were a sort of Cant or Jargon of certain Hereticks, and therefore very properly prefixed to such a Book as this of our Author.

* To the above-mentioned Treatise, called *Anthroposophia Theomagica*, there is another annexed, called *Anima magica Abscondita*, written by the same Author *Vaughan*, under the Name of *Eugenius Philalethes*, but in neither of those Treatises is there any Mention of *Acamoth* or its Qualities, so that this is nothing but Amusement, and a Ridicule of dark, unintelligible Writers; only the Words, *A cujus lacrymis*, &c.

*humecta prodit Substantia, a risu lucida, a
tristitia solida, & a timore mobilis, wherein †Vid. Anima
† Eugenius Philalethes hath committed magica ab-
an unpardonable Mistake. sccondita.*

*&c. are as we have said, transcribed from Irenæus,
although I know not from what part. I believe one of
the Author's Designs was to set curious Men a hunting
through Indexes, and enquiring for Books out of the com-
mon Road.*

S E C T.

S E C T. XI.

A T A L E of a T U B.

AFTER so wide a Compass as I have wandered, I do now gladly overtake, and close in with my Subject, and shall henceforth hold on with it in an even Pace to the End of my Journey, except some beautiful Prospect appears within Sight of my Way; whereof, although at present I have neither Warning nor Expectation, yet upon such an Accident, come when it will, I shall beg my Reader's Favour and Company, allowing me to conduct him through it along with myself. For in *Writing*, it is as in *Travelling*, if a Man is in haste to be at Home, (which I acknowledge to be none of my Case, having never so little Business, as when I am there) if his *Horse* be tired with long Riding, and ill Ways, or be naturally a Jade, I advise him clearly to make the straitest and the commonest Road, be it ever so dirty; but then surely we must own such a Man to be a scurvy Companion at best; he *spatters* himself and his Fellow-Travellers at every Step: All their Thoughts and Wishes, and Conversation turn entirely upon the Subject of their Journey's End; and at every Splash, and Plunge, and Stumble, they heartily wish one another at the Devil.

ON the other side, when a Traveller and his *Horse* are in Heart and Plight, when his Purse is full, and the Day before him; he takes the Road only where it is clean and convenient; entertaineth his Company there as agreeably as he can; but, on the first Occasion, carries them along with him to every delightful Scene in View, whether of Art, or Nature, or of both; and if they chance to refuse out of Stupidity or Weariness; let them jog on by themselves and be d---n'd; he will overtake
them

them at the next Town; at which arriving, he rides furiously through; the Men, Women, and Children run out to gaze, a hundred † *noisy Curs* run *barking* after him, of which if he honours the boldest with a *Lasb of his Whip*, it is rather out of Sport than Revenge: But should some *sourer Mungrel* dare too near an Approach, he receiveth a *Salute* on the Chops by an accidental Stroke from the Courser's Heels, (nor is any Ground lost by the Blow) which sendeth him yelping and limping home.

I now proceed to sum up the singular Adventures of my renowned *Jack*; the State of whose Dispositions and Fortunes, the careful Reader doth, no doubt, most exactly remember, as I last parted with them in the Conclusion of a former Section. Therefore, his next Care must be, from two of the foregoing, to extract a Scheme of Notions, that may best fit his Understanding for a true Relish of what is to ensue.

JACK had not only calculated the first Revolution of his Brain so prudently, as to give Rise to that Epidemick Sect of *Æolists*, but succeeding also into a new and strange Variety of Conceptions, the Fruitfulness of his Imagination led him into certain Notions, which, although in Appearance very unaccountable, were not without their Mysteries and their Meanings, nor wanted Followers to countenance and improve them. I shall therefore be extremely careful and exact in recounting such material Passages of this Nature, as I have been able to collect, either from undoubted Tradition, or indefatigable Reading; and shall describe them as graphically as it is possible, and as far as Notions of that Height and Latitude can be brought within the Compass of a Pen. Nor do I
at

† By these are meant what the Author calls, *The True Criticks*, Page 39.

at all question, but they will furnish Plenty of noble Matter for such, whose converting Imaginations dispose them to reduce all Things into *Types*; who can make *Shadows*, no Thanks to the Sun, and then mold them into Substances, no Thanks to Philosophy; whose peculiar Talent lieth in fixing Tropes and Allegories to the *Letter*, and refining what is Literal into Figure and Mystery.

JACK had provided a fair Copy of his Father's *Will*, engrossed in Form upon a large Skin of Parchment; and, resolving to act the Part of a most dutiful Son, he became the fondest Creature of it imaginable. For, although, as I have often told the Reader, it consisted wholly in certain plain, easy Directions about the Management and Wearing of their Coats, with Legacies and Penalties, in case of Obedience or Neglect; yet he began to entertain a Fancy, that the Matter was deeper and darker, and therefore must needs have a great deal more of Mystery at the Bottom. *Gentlemen*, said he, *I will prove this very Skin of Parchment to be Meat, Drink, and Cloth, to be the Philosopher's Stone, and universal Medicine.* * In consequence of which Raptures, he resolved to make use of it in the most necessary as well as the most paultry Occasions of Life. He had a Way of working it into any Shape he pleased; so that it served him for a Night-cap when he went to Bed, and for an Umbrello in rainy Weather. He would lap a Piece of it about a sore Toe, or when he had Fits, burn two Inches under his Nose; or if any Thing lay heavy on his Stomach, scrape off, and swallow as much of the Powder as would lie on a Silver Penny, they were all infallible Remedies. With Analogy to these Refinements, his common Talk and

* *The Author here lashes those Pretenders to Purity, who place so much Merit in using Scripture Phrase on all Occasions.*

and Conversation, * run wholly in the Phrase of his Will, and he circumscribed the utmost of his Eloquence within that Compass, not daring to let slip a Syllable without Authority from thence. Once, at a strange House, he was suddenly taken short, upon an urgent Juncture, whereon it may not be allowed too particularly to dilate; and being not able to call to mind, with that Suddenness the Occasion required, an authentick Phrase for demanding the Way to the Backside, he chose rather, as the more prudent Course, to incur the Penalty in such Cases usually annexed. Neither was it possible for the united Rhetorick of Mankind to prevail with him to make himself clean again: Because, having consulted the Will upon this Emergency, he met with a † Passage near the Bottom (whether foisted in by the Transcriber, is not known) which seemed to forbid it.

HE made it a Part of his Religion, never to say ‡ Grace to his Meat, nor could all the World persuade him, as the common Phrase is, to || eat his Victuals like a Christian.

* *The Protestant Dissenters use Scripture Phrases in their serious Discourses and Composures, more than the Church of England Men, accordingly Jack is introduced making his common Talk and Conversation to run wholly in the Phrase of his WILL.* W. Wotton.

† *I cannot guess the Author's Meaning here, which I would be very glad to know, because it seemeth to be of Importance.*

‡ *The slovenly Way of Receiving the Sacrament among the Fanatics.*

|| *This is a common Phrase to express Eating cleanly, and is meant for an Invective against that indecent Manner among some People in Receiving the Sacrament; so in the Lines before, which is to be understood of the Dissenters refusing to kneel at the Sacrament.*

HE bore a strange kind of Appetite to * *Snap-Dragon*, and to the livid Snuffs of a burning Candle, which he would catch and swallow with an Agility, wonderful to conceive; and by this Procedure maintained a perpetual Flame in his Belly, which issuing in a glowing Stream from both his Eyes, as well as his Nostrils, and his Mouth, made his Head appear in a dark Night like the Scull of an Ass, wherein a roguish Boy hath conveyed a Farthing Candle, to the Terror of His Majesty's Liege Subjects: Therefore, he made use of no other Expedient to light himself home, but was wont to say, *That a wise Man was his own Lanthorn.*

HE would shut his Eyes as he walked along the Streets, and if he happened to bounce his Head against a Post, or fall into the Kennel (as he seldom missed either to do one or both) he would tell the gibing 'Prentices, who looked on, that *he submitted with entire Resignation, as to a Trip, or a Blow of Fate, with whom he found by long Experience how vain it was either to wrestle or to cuff; and whoever durst undertake to do either, would be sure to come off with a swinging Fall, or a bloody Nose.* It was ordained, said he, *some few Days before the Creation, that my Nose and this very Post should have a Rencounter; and, therefore, Nature thought fit to send us both into the World in the same Age, and to make us Countrymen and Fellow Citizens.* Now, had mine Eyes been open, it is very likely, the Business might have been a great deal worse; for how many a confounded Slip is daily got by Man, with all his Foresight about him? Besides, the Eyes of the Understanding see best, when those of the Senses are out of the Way; and therefore, blind Men are observed to tread their Steps with much more Caution, and Conduct, and Judgment, than those who rely with

too

* I cannot well find the Author's Meaning here, unless it be the hot, untimely, blind Zeal of Enthusiasts.

too much Confidence upon the Virtue of the visual Nerve, which every little Accident shaketh out of Order, and a Drop or a Film can wholly disconcert; like a Lanthorn among a Pack of roaring Bullies, when they scower the Streets, exposing its Owner, and itself, to outward Kicks and Buffets, which both might have escaped, if the Vanity of Appearing would have suffered them to walk in the Dark. But, farther; if we examine the Conduct of these boasted Lights, it will prove yet a great deal worse than their Fortune: It is true, I have broke my Nose against this Post, because Fortune either forgot, or did not think it convenient to twitch me by the Elbow, and give me Notice to avoid it. But let not this encourage either the present Age or Posterity, to trust their Noses into the keeping of their Eyes, which may prove the fairest Way of losing them for good and all. For, O ye Eyes, ye blind Guides, miserable Guardians are Ye of our frail Noses; Ye, I say, who fasten upon the first Precipice in View, and then tow our wretched willing Bodies after You, to the very Brink of Destruction: But, alas, that Brink is rotten, our Feet slip, and we tumble down prone into a Gulph, without one hospitable Shrub in the Way to break the Fall; a Fall, to which not any Nose of mortal Make is equal, except that of the Giant * Laur- * Vide Don calco, who was Lord of the Silver Quixot. Bridge. Most properly, therefore, O Eyes, and with great Justice, may You be compared to those foolish Lights, which conduct Men through Dirt and Darkness, until they fall into a deep Pit or a noisom Bog.

THIS I have produced as a Scantling of Jack's great Eloquence, and the Force of his Reasoning upon such abstruse Matters.

HE was besides a Person of great Design and Improvement in Affairs of Devotion, having introduced a new Deity, who hath since met with a vast Number of Worshipers; by some called Babel, by others, Chaos; who had an antient Temple of

Gotbick Structure upon *Salisbury* Plain; famous for its Shrine, and Celebration by Pilgrims.

* WHEN he had some Roguish Trick to play, he would down with his Knees, up with his Eyes, and fall to Prayers, although in the midst of the Kennel. Then it was that those, who understood his Pranks, would be sure to get far enough out of his Way: And whenever Curiosity attracted Strangers to laugh, or to listen, he would of a sudden, with one Hand out with his *Gear*, and piss full in their Eyes, and, with the other, all bespatter them with Mud.

† IN Winter he went always loose and unbuttoned, and clad as thin as possible, to let in the ambient Heat; and in Summer lapped himself close and thick to keep it out.

‡ IN all Revolutions of Government, he would make his Court for the Office of *Hangman-General*; and in the Exercise of that Dignity, wherein he was very dextrous, would make use of || no other *Vizard* than a long Prayer.

HE had a Tongue so musculous and subtil, that he could twist it up into his Nose, and deliver a strange Kind of Speech from thence. He was also the first in these Kingdoms, who began to improve the *Spanish* Accomplishment of *Braying*; and, having large Ears perpetually exposed and erected, he carried his Art to such a Perfection, that it was a Point of great Difficulty to distinguish

* *The Villainies and Cruelties committed by Enthusiasts and Fanaticks among us were all performed under the Disguise of Religion and long Prayers.*

† *They affect Differences in Habit and Behaviour.*

‡ *They are severe Persecutors, and all in a Form of Cant and Devotion.*

|| *Cromwell and his Confederates went, as they called it, to seek God, when they resolved to murder the King.*

guish, either by the View or the Sound, between the *Original* and the *Copy*.

HE was troubled with a Disease, reverse to that called the Stinging of the *Tarantula*; and would run * Dog-mad at the Noise of *Musick*, especially a *Pair of Bag-pipes*. But he would cure himself again, by taking two or three Turns in *Westminster-hall*, or *Billingsgate*, or in a *Boarding-school*, or the *Royal-Exchange*, or a *State Coffee-house*.

HE was a Person that † *feared* no Colours, but mortally *bated* all, and upon that Account bore a cruel Aversion against *Painters*, insomuch, that in his Paroxysms, as he walked the Streets, he would have his Pockets loaden with Stones, to pelt at the *Signs*.

HAVING, from this Manner of Living, frequent Occasion to *wash* himself, he would often leap over Head and Ears into the Water, although it were in the midst of the Winter, but was always observed to come out again much *dirtier*, if possible, than he went in.

HE was the first that ever found out the Secret of contriving a ‡ *Soporiferous* Medicine to be conveyed in at the *Ears*; it was a Compound of *Sulphur* and *Balm of Gilead*, with a little *Pilgrim's Salve*.

HE wore a large Plaister of artificial *Causticks* on his Stomach, with the Fervor of which he could set himself a *groaning*, like the famous *Board*, upon Application of a red-hot Iron.

L 3

HE

* This is to expose our Dissenters Aversion from Instrumental Musick in Churches. W. Wotton.

† They quarrel at the most innocent Decency and Ornament, and defaced the Statues and Paintings on all the Churches in England.

‡ Fanatick Preaching, composed either of Hell and Damnation, or a fulsome Description of the Joys of Heaven, both in such a dirty, nauseous Style, as to be well resembled to Pilgrim's Salve.

* HE would stand in the Turning of a Street, and, calling to those who passed by, would cry to one; *Worthy Sir, do me the Honour of a good Slap in the Chaps:* To another, *Honest Friend, pray favour me with a handsom Kick on the Arse:* Madam, *I entreat a small Box on the Ear, from your Ladyship's fair Hands?* Noble Captain, *Lend a reasonable Thwack, for the Love of God, with that Cane of yours over these poor Shoulders.* And when he had by such earnest Sollicitations made a Shift to procure a Basting sufficient to swell up his Fancy and his Sides, he would return home extremely comforted, and full of terrible Accounts of what he had undergone for the Publick Good. *Observe this Stroke,* (said he, shewing his bare Shoulders,) *a plaguy Janisary gave it me this very Morning at seven a Clock, as, with much ado, I was driving off the Great Turk.* Neighbours, *mind this broken Head deserveth a Plaster;* had poor Jack been tender of his Noddle, you would have seen the Pope, and the French King, long before this Time of Day, among your Wives and your Warehouses. Dear Christians, the Great Mogul was come as far as White Chappel, and you may thank these poor Sides, that he hath not (God bless us) already swallowed up Man, Woman, and Child.

† IT was highly worth observing the singular Effects of that Aversion, or Antipathy, which
Jack

* The Fanaticks have always had a Way of affecting to run into Persecution, and count vast Merit upon every little Hardship they suffer.

† The Papists and Fanaticks, although they appear the most averse from each other, yet bear a near Resemblance in many Things; as hath been observed by Learned Men.

Ibid. The Agreement of our Dissenters and the Papists in that which Bishop Stillingfleet called, The Fanaticism of the Church of Rome, is ludicrously described for several Pages together by Jack's Likeness

Jack and his Brother *Peter* seemed, even to an Affection, to bear against each other. *Peter* had lately done some Rogueries that forced him to abscond; and he seldom ventured to stir out before Night, for fear of Bayliffs. Their Lodgings were at the two most distant Parts of the Town from each other; and whenever their Occasions, or Humours called them abroad, they would make Choice of the oddest unlikely Times, and most uncouth Rounds they could invent; that they might be sure to avoid one another: Yet, after all this, it was their perpetual Fortune to meet. The Reason of which is easy enough to apprehend: For, the Phrenzy and the Spleen of both, having the same Foundation, we may look upon them as two Pair of Compasses, equally extended, and the fixed Foot of each, remaining in the same Center; which, although moving contrary Ways at first, will be sure to encounter somewhere or other in the Circumference. Besides, it was among the great Misfortunes of *Jack*, to bear a huge Personal Resemblance with his Brother *Peter*. Their Humour and Dispositions were not only the same, but there was a close Analogy in their Shape, and Size, and their Mien. Insomuch, as nothing was more frequent than for a Bayliff to seize *Jack* by the Shoulders, and cry, *Mr. Peter, You are the King's Prisoner*. Or, at other Times, for one of *Peter's* nearest Friends to accost *Jack* with open Arms, *Dear Peter, I am glad to see thee, pray send me one of your best Medicines for the Worms*. This, we may suppose, was a mortifying Return of those Pains and Proceedings, *Jack* had laboured in so long: And finding, how directly opposite all his Endeavours had answered to the sole End and Intention, which he had proposed to himself, how could

ness to Peter, and their being often mistaken for each other, their frequent Meeting, when they least intended it. W. Wotton,

could it avoid having terrible Effects upon a Head and Heart so furnished as his? However, the poor Remainers of his *Coat* bore all the Punishment: The orient Sun never entered upon his diurnal Progress, without missing a Piece of it. He hired a Taylor to stitch up the Collar so close, that it was ready to choak him, and squeezed out his Eyes at such a Rate, as one could see nothing but the White. What little was left of the main Substance of the Coat, he rubbed every Day, for two Hours, against a rough-cast Wall, in order to grind away the Remnant of *Lace* and *Embroidery*; but at the same Time went on with so much Violence, that he proceeded a *Heathen Philosopher*. Yet, after all he could do of this kind, the Success continued still to disappoint his Expectation. For, as it is the Nature of Rags, to bear a kind of mock Resemblance to Finery; there being a sort of fluttering Appearance in both, which is not to be distinguished at a Distance, in the Dark, or by short-sighted Eyes; So, in those Junctures, it fared with *Jack* and his Tatters, that they offered to the first View a ridiculous Flanting, which, assisting the Resemblance in Person and Air, thwarted all his Projects of Separation, and left so near a Similitude between them, as frequently deceived the very Disciples and Followers of both. * * *

* * * * *
 * * * * * * *Desunt*
 * * * * * * *nonnulla.*
 * * * * *

THE old *Sclavonian* Proverb said well, That it is with Men, as with Asses; whoever would keep them fast, must find a very good Hold at their Ears. Yet, I think, we may affirm, that it hath been verified by repeated Experience,

Effugiet tamen hac sceleratus vincula Proteus.

It

It is good, therefore, to read the Maxims of our Ancestors, with great Allowances to Times and Persons: For, if we look into primitive Records, we shall find, that no Revolutions have been so great, or so frequent, as those of human *Ears*. In former Days, there was a curious Invention to catch and keep them; which, I think, we may justly reckon among the *Artes perditæ*: And how can it be otherwise, when, in these latter Centuries, the very Species is not only diminished to a very lamentable Degree, but the poor Remainder is also degenerated so far, as to mock our skilfullest *Tennure*? For, if the only sitting of one *Ear* in a Stag, hath been found sufficient to propagate the Defect through a whole Forest; why should we wonder at the greatest Consequences, from so many Loppings and Mutilations, to which the *Ears* of our Fathers and our own, have been of late so much exposed: It is true, indeed, that while this *Island* of ours was under the *Dominion of Grace*, many Endeavours were made to improve the Growth of *Ears* once more among us. The Proportion of Largeness, was not only looked upon as an Ornament of the *Outward Man*, but as a Type of Grace in the *Inward*. Besides, it is held by Naturalists, that if there be a Protuberancy of Parts in the *Superior Region* of the Body, as in the *Ears* and *Nose*, there must be a Parity also in the *Inferior*: And therefore, in that truly pious Age, the *Males* in every Assembly, according as they were gifted, appeared very forward in exposing their *Ears* to view, and the Regions about them; because * *Hip- * Lib. de aere*
pocrates tells us, that *when the Vein locis & a-*
behind the Ear happens to be cut, a quis.
Man becomes an Eunuch: And the *Females* were nothing backwarder in beholding and edifying by them: Whereof those, who had already used the Means, looked about them with great Concern, in hopes of conceiving a suitable Offspring

spring by such a Prospect: Others, who stood Candidates for *Benevolence*, found there a plentiful Choice, and were sure to fix upon such as discovered the largest *Ears*, that the Breed might not dwindle between them. Lastly, the devouter Sisters, who looked upon all extraordinary Dilatations of that Member, as Protrusions of Zeal, or spiritual Excrescencies, were sure to honour every Head they sat upon, as if they had been *Marks of Grace*; but, especially, that of the Preacher, whose *Ears* were usually of the prime Magnitude; which, upon that Account, he was very frequent and exact in exposing with all Advantages to the People: In his Rhetorical Paroxysms, turning sometimes to *bold forth* the one, and sometimes to *bold forth* the other: From which Custom, the whole Operation of Preaching is to this very Day, among their Professors, stiled by the Phrase of *Holding forth*.

SUCH was the Progress of the *Saints* for advancing the Size of that Member; and it is thought, the Success would have been every way answerable, if, in Process of Time, * a cruel King had not arose, who raised a bloody Persecution against all *Ears* above a certain Standard: Upon which, some were glad to hide their flourishing Sprouts in a black Border, others crept wholly under a Periwig: Some were slit, others cropped, and a great Number sliced off to the Stumps. But of this more hereafter, in my *general History of Ears*; which I design very speedily to bestow upon the Publick.

FROM this brief Survey of the falling State of *Ears*, in the last Age, and the small Care had to advance their antient Growth in the present; it is manifest, how little Reason we can have to rely upon a Hold so short, so weak, and so slippery; and that whoever desires to catch Mankind fast, must

* This was King Charles the Second, who, at his Restoration, turned out all the Dissenting Teachers that would not conform.

must have Recourse to some other Methods. Now, he that will examine Human Nature with Circumspection enough, may discover several *Handles*, whereof the * *Six Senses* afford one a Piece, beside a great Number that are screwed to the Passions, and some few rivetted to the Intellect. Among these last *Curiosity* is one, and, of all others, affords the firmest Grasp: *Curiosity*, that Spur in the Side, that Bridle in the Mouth, that Ring in the Nose, of a lazy, an impatient, and grunting Reader. By this *Handle* it is, that an Author should seize upon his Readers; which as soon as he hath once compassed, all Resistance and Struggling are in vain; and they become his Prisoners as close as he pleaseth, till Weariness or Dulness force him to let go his Gripe.

AND therefore, I the Author of this miraculous Treatise, having hitherto, beyond Expectation, maintained by the aforesaid *Handle* a firm Hold upon my gentle Readers, it is with great Reluctance that I am at length compelled to remit my Grasp; leaving them, in the Perusal of what remaineth, to that natural *Oscitancy* inherent in the Tribe. I can only assure thee, Courteous Reader, for both our Comforts, that my Concern is altogether equal to thine, for my Unhappiness in losing, or mislaying among my Papers the remaining Part of these Memoirs; which consisted of Accidents, Turns, and Adventures, both new, agreeable, and surprizing; and, therefore, calculated, in all due Points, to the delicate Taste of this our noble Age. But, alas with my utmost Endeavours, I have been able only to retain a few of the Heads. Under which there was a full Account, how *Peter* got a *Protection* out of the *King's Bench*; and of a * *Reconcilement* between

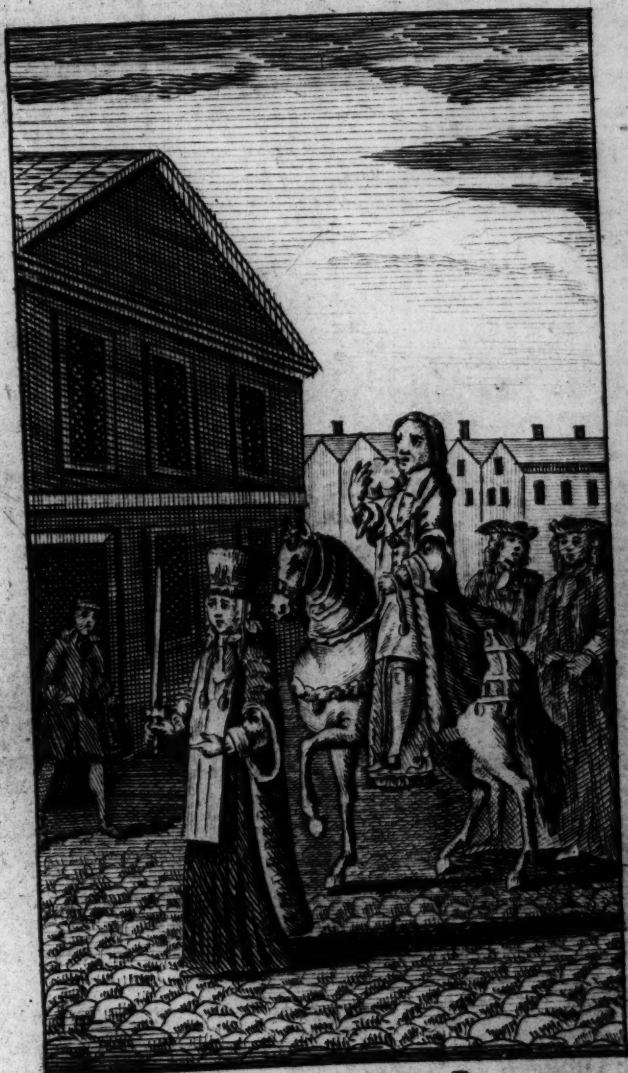
* In the Reign of King James the Second, the Presbyterians, by the King's Invitation, joined with the Papists

tween *Jack* and him, upon a Design they had in a certain rainy Night to trepan Brother *Martin* into a *Spunging-House*, and there strip him to the Skin. How *Martin*, with much ado, shewed them both a fair Pair of Heels. How a new *Warrant* came out against *Peter*: Upon which, how *Jack* left him in the Lurch, stole his *Protection*, and made use of it himself. How *Jack's* Tatters came into Fashion in Court and City; How he * got upon a great Horse, and eat † *Custard*. But the Particulars of all these, with several others, which have now slid out of my Memory, are lost, beyond all Hopes of Recovery. For which Misfortune, leaving my Readers to condole with each other, as far as they shall find it to agree with their several Constitutions; but conjuring them by all the Friendship that hath passed between Us, from the Title-page to this, not to proceed so far as to injure their Healths, for an Accident past Remedy; I now go on to the Ceremonial Part of an accomplished Writer, and therefore, by a Courtly Modern, least of all others to be omitted.

pists against the Church of England, and addressed him for the Repeal of the penal Laws and Test. The King, by his Dispensing Power, gave Liberty of Conscience, which both Papists and Presbyterians made use of; but upon the Revolution, the Papists being down of Course, the Presbyterians freely continued their Assemblies, by Virtue of King James's Indulgence, before they had a Toleration by Law: this I believe the Author means by *Jack's* stealing *Peter's* Protection, and making use of it himself.

* Sir Humphry Edwyn, a Presbyterian, was some Years ago Lord-Mayor of London, and had the Insolence to go in his Formalities to a Conventicle, with the Ensign of his Office.

† *Custard* a famous Dish at a Lord Mayor's Feast.



®

S

THE CONCLUSION.

G *OING too long* is a Cause of Abortion as effectual, although not so frequent, as *Going too short*; and holdeth true especially in the *Labours* of the Brain. Well fare the Heart of that noble * *Jesuit*, who first ad- * *Pere d'Or-*
ventured to confess in Print, that *leans*.

Books must be suited to their several Seasons, like Dress, and Dyet, and Diversions: And better fare our noble Nation, for refining upon this among other *French* Modes. I am living fast, to see the Time when a Book, that misseth its Tide, shall be neglected, as the *Moon* by Day, or like *Mackarel* a Week after the Season. No Man hath more nicely observed our Climate, than the Bookseller who bought the Copy of this Work; he knoweth to a Tittle what Subjects will best go off in a *dry Year*, and which it is proper to expose foremost, when the Weather-glass is fallen to *much Rain*. When he had seen this Treatise, and consulted his *Almanack* upon it; he gave me to understand, that he had manifestly considered the two principal Things, which were the *Bulk*, and the *Subject*; and found, it would never *take* but after a

M

long

long Vacation, and then only in Case it should happen to be a hard Year for Turnips. Upon which I desired to know, *considering my urgent Necessities*, what he thought might be acceptable this Month. He looked *Westward*, and said, *I doubt we shall have a Fit of bad Weather; however, if you could prepare some pretty little Banter, (but not in Verse) or a small Treatise upon the ----- it would run like Wild-fire. But, if it hold up, I have already hired an Author to write something against Dr. Bently, which I am sure will turn to Account.*

At length we agreed upon this Expedient; that when a Customer comes for one of these, and desires in Confidence to know the Author; he will tell him very privately, as a Friend, naming which ever of the Wits shall happen to be that Week in the Vogue; and if *Durfy's* last Play should be in Course, I had as lieve he may be the Person as *Congreve*. This I mention, because I am wonderfully well acquainted with the present Relish of Courteous Readers; and have often observed, with singular Pleasure, that a *Fly*, driven from a *Honey-pot*, will immediately, with very good Appetite alight, and finish his Meal on an *Excrement*.

I HAVE one Word to say upon the Subject of *profound Writers*, who are grown very numerous of late: And, I know very well, the judicious World is resolved to list me in that Number. I conceive therefore, as to the Business of being *profound*, that it is with *Writers*, as with *Wells*; a Person with good Eyes may see to the Bottom of the deepest, provided any *Water* be there; and that often, when there is nothing in the World at the Bottom, besides *Dryness* and *Dirt*, although it be but a Yard and a half under Ground, it shall pass, however, for wondrous *deep*, upon no wiser a Reason than because it is wondrous *Dark*.

I AM

I AM now trying an Experiment very frequent among Modern Authors, which is, to *write upon Nothing*, when the Subject is utterly exhausted, to let the Pen still move on; by some called, the Ghost of Wit, delighting to walk after the Death of its Body. And to say the Truth, there seemeth to be no Part of Knowledge in fewer Hands, than that of discerning *when to have done*. By the Time that an Author hath writ out a Book, he and his Readers are become old Acquaintants, and grow very loth to part: So that I have sometimes known it to be in Writing, as in Visiting, where the Ceremony of taking Leave hath employed more Time than the whole Conversation before. The Conclusion of a Treatise resembles the Conclusion of Human Life, which hath sometimes been compared to the End of a Feast; where few are satisfied to depart, *ut plenus vitæ convivā*: For Men will sit down after the fullest Meal, although it be only to *doze*, or to *sleep* out the rest of the Day. But, in this latter, I differ extremely from other Writers; and shall be too proud, if by all my Labours I can have any Ways contributed to the *Repose* of Mankind in † Times so turbulent and unquiet as these. Neither do I think such an Employment so very alien from the Office of a *Wit*, as some would suppose. For among a very polite Nation in * *Greece*, there were the *same* Temples built, and consecrated to *Sleep* * *Træzenii Pausan*, l. 2. and the *Muses*, between which two Deities they believed the strictest Friendship was established.

I HAVE one concluding Favour to request of my Reader; that he will not expect to be equally diverted and informed by every Line or every Page of this Discourse, but give some Allowance to the

M 2

Author's

† This was writ before the Peace of Reswick.

Author's Spleen, and short Fits or Intervals of Dulness, as well as his own; and lay it seriously to his Conscience, whether, if he were walking the Streets, in dirty Weather, or a rainy Day, he would allow it fair Dealing in Folks at their Ease from a Window to critick his Gait, and ridicule his Dress at such a Juncture.

IN my Disposure of Employments of the Brain, I have thought fit to make *Invention* the Master, and give *Method* and *Reason* the Office of its *Lacquays*. The Cause of this Distribution was, from observing it my peculiar Case, to be often under a Temptation of being *Witty* upon Occasion, where I could be neither *Wise* nor *Sound*, nor any Thing to the Matter in Hand. And I am too much a Servant of the *modern* Way, to neglect any such Opportunities, whatever Pains or Improprieties I may be at to introduce them. For, I have observed, that from a laborious Collection of Seven Hundred Thirty Eight *Flowers*, and *shining Hints* of the best *modern* Authors, digested with great Reading into my Book of *Common-places*, I have not been able, after five Years, to draw, hook, or force into common Conversation, any more than a Dozen. Of which Dozen the one Moiety failed of Success, by being dropped among unsuitable Company; and the other cost me so many Strains, and Traps, and *Ambages* to introduce, that I at length resolved to give it over. Now, this Disappointment, (to discover a Secret) I must own, gave me the first Hint of setting up for an *Author*; and, I have since found among some particular Friends, that it is become a very general Complaint, and hath produced the same Effects upon many others. For, I have remarked many a *towardsly Word* to be wholly neglected or despised in *Discourse*, which hath passed very smoothly, with some Consideration and Esteem, after its Preferment and Sanction in *Print*. But now, since, by the Liberty and Encouragement

couragement of the Press, I am grown absolute Master of the Occasions and Opportunities to expose the Talents I have acquired; I already discover, that the *Issues* of my *Observanda* begin to grow too large for the *Receipts*. Therefore, I shall here pause a while, until I find, by feeling the World's Pulse, and my own, that it will be of absolute Necessity for us both to resume my Pen.

A Full and True
ACCOUNT
OF THE
BATTLE,
Fought last **FRIDAY,**
BETWEEN THE
ANTIENT and the MODERN
BOOKS
IN
St. *JAMES'S*
LIBRARY.

DUBLIN:
Printed in the Year. **MDCCCLVI.**

T H E
B O O K S E L L E R
T O T H E
R E A D E R.

THE following Discourse, as it is unquestionably of the same Author, so it seemeth to have been written about the same Time with the former, I mean, the Year 1697, when the famous Dispute was on Foot, about *antient and modern Learning*. The Controversy took its Rise from an Essay of Sir *William Temple's* upon that Subject; which was answered by *W. Wotton*, B. D. with an Appendix by Dr. *Bentley*, endeavouring to destroy the Credit of *Æsop* and *Phalaris* for Authors, whom Sir *William Temple* had, in the Essay before-mentioned, highly commended. In that Appendix, the Doctor falls hard upon a new Edition of *Phalaris*, put out by the Honourable *Charles Boyle* (now Earl of **Orrery*;) to which Mr. *Boyle* replied at large, with great Learning and Wit; and the Doctor voluminously rejoined. In this Dispute, the Town highly resented to see a Person of Sir *William Temple's* Character and Merits roughly used by the two Reverend Gentlemen aforesaid, and without any Manner of Provocation. At length, there appearing no End of the Quarrel, our Author telleth us, that the Books in St. *James's* Library, looking upon themselves as Parties principally concerned, took

up

up the Controversy, and came to a decisive Battle : But the Manuscript, by the Injury of Fortune, or Weather, being in several Places imperfect, we cannot learn to which Side the Victory fell.

✱ I MUST warn the Reader, to beware of applying to Persons what is here meant only of Books, in the most literal Sense. So, when *Virgil* is mentioned, we are not to understand the Person of a famous Poet, called by that Name, but only certain Sheets of Paper, bound up in Leather, containing in Print the Works of the said Poet, and so of the rest.

THE

THE
P R E F A C E
OF THE
AUTHOR.

SATYR is a Sort of Glass, wherein Beholders do generally discover every Body's Face but their own; which is the chief Reason for that kind Reception it meets in the World, and that so very few are offended with it. But if it should happen otherwise, the Danger is not great; and I have learned, from long Experience, never to apprehend Mischief from those Understandings I have been able to provoke: For Anger and Fury, though they add Strength to the Sinews of the Body, yet are found to relax those of the Mind, and to render all its Efforts feeble and impotent.

THERE is a Brain that will endure but one Scumming: Let the Owner gather it with Discretion, and manage his little Stock with Husbandry; but,

of

of all Things, let him beware of bringing it under the Lash of his Betters; because, That will make it all bubble up into Impertinence, and he will find no new Supply: Wit, without Knowledge, being a Sort of Cream, which gathers in a Night to the Top, and by a skilful Hand may be soon whipt into Froth; but once skimmed away, what appears underneath will be fit for nothing but to be thrown to the Hogs.

A FULL and TRUE
 A C C O U N T
 O F T H E
 B A T T L E,
 Fought last FRIDAY, &c.

WHOEVER examines with due Circum-
 spection into the * *Annual Records of*
Time, will find it remarked, That *War*
is the Child of Pride, and *Pride the Daugh-*
ter of Riches; the former of which Assertions may
 be soon granted; but one cannot so easily subscribe
 to the latter: For *Pride* is nearly related to *Beggary*
 and *Want*, either by Father or Mother, and some-
 times by both: And, to speak naturally, it very sel-
 dom happens among Men to fall out, when all have
 enough: Invasions usually travelling from *North* to
South, that is to say, from Poverty to Plenty.
 The most antient and natural Grounds of Quarrels
 are *Lust* and *Avarice*; which, although we may al-
 low to be Brethren or collateral Branches of *Pride*,
 are certainly the Issues of *Want*. For, to speak in
 the Phrase of Writers upon Politicks, we may
 observe in the Republick of *Dogs*, (which in its
 Original seemeth to be an Institution of the *Mary*)
 N that

* *Riches produceth Pride; Pride is War's Ground,*
 &c. Vid. Ephem. de *Mary Clark* Opt. Edit.

that the whole State is ever in the profoundest Peace after a full Meal; and that Civil Broils arise among them, when it happens for one great *Bone* to be seized on by some *leading Dog*, who either divides it among the *Few*, and then it falls to an *Oligarchy*, or keeps it to himself, and then it runs up to a *Tyranny*. The same Reasoning also holds Place among them, in those Dissensions we behold upon a Turgescency in any of their Females. For, the Right of Possession lying in common, (it being impossible to establish a Property in so delicate a Case) Jealousies and Suspicions do so abound, that the whole Commonwealth of that Street is reduced to a manifest *State of War* of every *Citizen* against every *Citizen*; until some one of more Courage, Conduct, or Fortune than the rest, seizeth and enjoys the Prize. Upon which naturally ariseth Plenty of Heart-burning, and Envy, and Snarling against the *happy Dog*. Again, if we look upon any of these Republicks engaged in a Foreign War, either of Invasion or Defence, we shall find, the same Reasoning will serve, as to the Grounds and Occasions of each; and that *Poverty*, or *Want*, in some Degree or other, (whether real, or in Opinion, which makes no Alteration in the Case) hath a great Share, as well as *Pride*, on the Part of the Aggressor.

Now, whoever will please to take this Scheme, and either reduce or adapt it to an intellectual State, or Commonwealth of Learning, will soon discover the first Ground of Disagreement between the two great Parties at this Time in Arms; and may form just Conclusions upon the Merits of either Cause. But the Issue or Events of this War are not so easy to conjecture at: For the present Quarrel is so enflamed by the warm Heads of either Faction, and the Pretensions *somewhere or other* so exorbitant, as not to admit the least Overtures of Accommodation. This Quarrel first began (as I have heard it affirmed by an old Dweller in the Neighbourhood) about
a small

a small Spot of Ground, lying and being upon one of the two Tops of the Hill *Parnassus*; the highest and largest of which had, it seemeth, been Time out of Mind in quiet Possession of certain Tenants called the *Antients*; and the other was held by the *Moderns*. But these, disliking their present Station, sent certain Ambassadors to the *Antients*, complaining of a great Nuisance, how the Height of that Part of *Parnassus* quite spoiled the Prospect of theirs, especially towards the *East*; and therefore, to avoid a War, offered them the Choice of this Alternative; either that the *Antients* would please to remove themselves and their Effects down to the lower Summit, which the *Moderns* would graciously surrender to them, and advance in their Place; or else, that the said *Antients* will give leave to the *Moderns* to come with Shovels and Mattocks, and level the said Hill, as low as they shall think it convenient. To which the *Antients* made Answer; How little they expected such a Message as this, from a Colony, whom they had admitted, out of their own free Grace, to so near a neighbourhood. That, as to their own Seat, they were *Aborigines* of it; and therefore, to talk with them of a Removal, or Surrender, was a Language they did not understand. That, if the Height of the Hill, on their Side, shortened the Prospect of the *Moderns*, it was a Disadvantage they could not help; but desired them to consider, whether that Injury (if it be any) were not largely recompensed by the *Shade* and *Shelter* it afforded them. That, as to the levelling or digging down, it was either Folly or Ignorance to propose it, if they did, or did not know, how that Side of the Hill was an entire Rock, which would break their Tools and Hearts, without any Damage to itself. That they would therefore advise the *Moderns*, rather to raise their own Side of the Hill, than dream of pulling down that of the *Antients*; to the former of which they would not only give Licence, but also largely contribute. All this was

rejected by the *Moderns* with much Indignation, who still insisted upon one of the two Expedients ; and so this Difference broke out into a long and obstinate War, maintained on the one Part by Resolution, and by the Courage of certain Leaders and Allies ; but, on the other, by the Greatness of their Number, upon all Defeats affording continual Recruits. In this Quarrel, whole Rivulets of *Ink* have been exhausted, and the Virulence of both Parties enormously augmented. Now, it must here be understood, that *Ink* is the great missive Weapon in all Battles of the *Learned* ; which, conveyed through a Sort of Engine, called a *Quill*, infinite Numbers of these are darted at the Enemy, by the valiant on each Side, with equal Skill and Violence, as if it were an Engagement of *Porcupines*. This malignant Liquor was compounded by the Engineer who invented it, of two Ingredients, which are *Gall* and *Copperas*, by its Bitterness and Venom to *suit*, in some Degree, as well as to *foment* the Genius of the Combatants. And as the *Grecians*, after an Engagement, when they could not *agree* about the Victory, were wont to set up Trophies on both Sides, the beaten Party being content to be at the same Expence, to keep itself in Countenance, (a laudable and antient Custom happily revived of late in the Art of War) so the *Learned*, after a sharp and bloody Dispute, do on both Sides hang out their Trophies too, which ever comes by the worst. These Trophies have largely inscribed on them the Merits of the Cause ; a full impartial Account of such a Battle, and how the Victory fell clearly to the Party that set them up. They are known to the World under several Names ; as, *Disputes*, *Arguments*, *Rejoinders*, *Brief Considerations*, *Answers*, *Replies*, *Remarks*, *Reflections*, *Objections*, *Confutations*. For a very few Days they are fixed up in all publick

Places, either by themselves or their
 * *Their Title* * Representatives, for Passengers to
Pages. gaze at: From whence the chief and
 largest are removed to certain Magazines

zines they call *Libraries*, there to remain in a Quar-
ter purposely assigned them, and from thenceforth
begin to be called *Books of Controversy*.

IN these Books is wonderfully instilled and pre-
served the Spirit of each Warrior while he is alive;
and, after his Death, his Soul transinigrates there,
to inform them. This, at least, is the more com-
mon Opinion : But, I believe, it is with Libraries, as
with other Cœmeteries, where some Philosophers af-
firm, that a certain Spirit, which they call *Brutum Homi-
nis*, hovers over the Monument, until the Body is cor-
rupted, and turneth to *Dust* or to *Worms*, but then
vanisheth or dissolveth : So, we may say, a restless Spi-
rit haunts over every *Book*, until *Dust* or *Worms* have
seized upon it ; which to some may happen in a few
Days, but to others later ; and therefore, *Books of
Controversy*, being of all others haunted by the most
disorderly Spirits, have always been confined in a
separate Lodge from the rest ; and, for Fear of mu-
tual Violence against each other, it was thought
prudent by our Ancestors to bind them to the Peace
with strong Iron Chains. Of which Invention the
original Occasion was this ; when the Works of
Scotus first came out, they were carried to a certain
great Library, and had Lodgings appointed them ;
but this Author was no sooner settled, than he
went to visit his Master *Aristotle*, and there both
concerted together to seize *Plato* by main Force, and
turn him out from his antient Station among the
Divines, where he had peaceably dwelt near eight
hundred Years. The Attempt succeeded, and the
two Usurpers have reigned ever since in his Stead ;
but, to maintain Quiet for the future, it was decreed,
that all *Polemicks* of the larger Size should be held
fast with a Chain.

BY this Expedient, the publick Peace of Libra-
ries might certainly have been preserved, if a new
Species of controversial Books had not arose of late
Years, instinct with a most malignant Spirit, from

the War above-mentioned, between the *Learned*, about the higher Summit of *Parnassus*.

WHEN these Books were first admitted into the publick Libraries, I remember to have said upon Occasion to several Persons concerned, how I was sure they would create Broils wherever they came, unless a World of Care were taken: And therefore I advised, that the Champions of each Side should be coupled together, or otherwise mixed, that, like the blending of contrary Poisons, their Malignity might be employed among themselves. And, it seems, I was neither an ill Prophet, nor an ill Counsellor; for it was nothing else but the Neglect of this Caution, which gave Occasion to the terrible Fight, that happened on *Friday* last, between the *Antient* and *Modern Books* in the *King's Library*. Now, because the Talk of this Battle is so fresh in every Body's Mouth, and the Expectation of the Town so great to be informed in the Particulars; I, being possessed of all Qualifications requisite in an *Historian*, and retained by neither Party, have resolved to comply with the urgent *Importunity of my Friends*, by writing down a full impartial Account thereof.

THE *Guardian* of the *Regal Library*, a Person of great Valour, but chiefly renowned for his † *Humanity*, had been a fierce Champion for the *Moderns*, and, in an Engagement upon *Parnassus*, had vowed, with his own Hands, to knock down two of the *Antient* Chiefs, who guarded a small Pass on the superior Rock; but, endeavouring to climb up, was cruelly obstructed by his own unhappy Weight and Tendency towards his Center: a Quality, to which those of the *Modern Party* are extreme subject; for, being light-headed, they have in Speculation a wonderful Agility, and conceive nothing too high for them to mount; but in reducing to Practice
discover

† The Honourable Mr. Boyle, in the Preface to his Edition of Phalaris, says, he was refused a Manuscript by the Library Keeper, pro solita Humanitate sua.

discover a mighty Pressure about their Posteriors and their Heels. Having thus failed in his Design, the disappointed Champion bore a cruel Rancour to the *Antients*, which he resolved to gratify, by shewing all Marks of his Favour to the *Books* of their Adversaries, and lodging them in the fairest Apartments; when, at the same Time, whatever *Book* had the Boldness to own itself for an Advocate of the *Antients*, was buried alive in some obscure Corner, and threatened, upon the least Displeasure, to be turned out of Doors. Besides, it so happened, that about this Time there was a strange Confusion of Place among all the *Books* in the Library, for which several Reasons were assigned. Some imputed it to a great Heap of *learned Dust*, which a perverse Wind blew off from a Shelf of *Moderns* into the *Keeper's* Eyes. Others affirmed, he had a Humour to pick the *Worms* out of the *Schoolmen*, and swallow them fresh and fasting; whereof some fell upon his *Spleen*, and some climbed up into his Head, to the great Perturbation of both. And lastly, others maintained, that, by walking much in the dark about the Library, he had quite lost the Situation of it out of his Head; and therefore, in replacing his *Books*, he was apt to mistake, and clap *Dés-Cartes* next to *Aristotle*; poor *Plato* had got between *Hobbes* and the *Seven Wise Masters*, and *Virgil* was hemmed in with *Dryden* on one Side, and *Withers* on the other.

MEAN while, those *Books*, that were Advocates for the *Moderns*, chose out one from among them, to make a Progress through the whole Library, examine the Number and Strength of their Party, and concert their Affairs. This Messenger performed all Things very industriously, and brought back with him a List of their Forces, in all Fifty Thousand, consisting chiefly of *Light Horse*, *heavy armed Foot*, and *Mercenaries*; whereof the *Foot* were in general but forrily armed, and worse clad; their *Horses* large, but extreemly out of Case and Heart; however,

ever, some few, by trading among the *Antients*, had furnished themselves tolerably enough.

WHILE Things were in this Ferment, *Discord* grew extreamly high, hot Words passed on both Sides, and ill Blood was plentifully bred. Here a solitary *Antient*, squeezed up upon a whole Shelf of *Moderns*, offered fairly to dispute the Case, and to prove by manifest Reasons, that the Priority was due to them, from long Possession, and in regard of their Prudence, Antiquity, and above all, their great Merits towards the *Moderns*. But these denied the Premises, and seemed very much to wonder, how the *Antients* could pretend to insist upon their Antiquity, when it was so plain (if they went to that) that the *Moderns* were much the

† According more † *Antient* of the two. As for any to the modern Obligations they owed to the *Antients*, Paradox. they renounced them all. It is true, said they, *we are informed, some few of our Party have been so mean to borrow their Subsistence from you; but the rest, infinitely the greater Number, (and especially, we French and English) were so far from stooping to so base an Example, that there never passed, until this very Hour, six Words between us. For our Horses are of our own breeding, our Arms of our own forging, and our Cloaths of our own cutting out and sowing. Plato was by Chance upon the next Shelf, and observing those that spoke to be in the ragged Plight mentioned a while ago, their Fades lean and foundered, their Weapons of rotten Wood, their Armour rusty, and nothing but Rags underneath; he laughed aloud, and in his pleasant Way, swore, by G--, he believed them.*

Now, the *Moderns* have not proceeded in their late Negotiation with Secrecy enough to escape the Notice of the Enemy. For those Advocates, who had begun the Quarrel, by setting first on Foot the Dispute of Precedency, talked so loud of coming to a Battle, that *Temple* happened to overhear them, and gave immediate Intelligence to the *Antients*;
who

who thereupon drew up their scattered Troops together, resolving to act upon the Defensive; upon which, several of the *Moderns* fled over to their Party, and, among the rest, *Temple* himself. This *Temple* having been educated, and long conversed among the *Antients*, was, of all the *Moderns*, their greatest Favourite, and became their greatest Champion.

THINGS were at this Crisis, when a material Accident fell out. For, upon the highest Corner of a large Window there dwelt a certain *Spider*, swollen up to the first Magnitude, by the Destruction of infinite Numbers of *Flies*, whose Spoils lay scattered before the Gates of his Palace, like human Bones before the Cave of some Giant. The Avenues to his Castle were guarded with Turnpikes and Palisadoes, all after the *Modern Way* of Fortification. After you had passed several Courts, you came to the Center, wherein you might behold the *Constable* himself in his own Lodgings, which had Windows fronting to each Avenue, and Ports to fall out upon all Occasions of Prey or Defence. In this Mansion he had for some Time dwelt in Peace and Plenty, without Danger to his *Person* by *Swallows* from above, or to his *Palace* by *Brooms* from below; when it was the Pleasure of Fortune to conduct thither a wandering *Bee*, to whose Curiosity a broken Pane in the Glass had discovered itself; and in he went, where expatiating a while, he at last happened to alight upon one of the outward Walls of the *Spider's* Citadel; which, yielding to the unequal Weight, sunk down to the very Foundation. Thrice he endeavoured to force his Passage, and thrice the Center shook. The *Spider* within, feeling the terrible Convulsion, supposed at first, that *Nature* was approaching to her final Dissolution; or else, that *Beelzebub*, with all his Legions, was come to revenge the Death of many thousands of his Subjects, whom his Enemy had slain and devoured. However, he at length valiantly resolved to issue forth,
and

and meet his Fate. Mean while, the *Bee* had acquitted himself of his Toils, and, posted securely at some Distance, was employed in cleansing his Wings, and disengaging them from the ragged Remnants of the Cobweb. By this Time the *Spider* was adventured out, when beholding the Chasms, and Ruins, and Dilapidations of his Fortrefs, he was very near at his Wit's End, he stormed and swore like a Madman, and swelled until he was ready to burst. At length casting his Eye upon the *Bee*, and wisely gathering Causes from Events, (for they knew each other by Sight) *A Plague split you*, said he, *for a giddy Son of a Whore; is it you, with a Vengeance, that have made this Litter here? Could not you look before you, and be d---n'd? Do you think I have nothing else to do (in the Devil's Name) but to Mend and Repair after your Arse? Good Words, Friend,* said the *Bee*, (having pruned himself, and being disposed to drole) *I will give you my Hand and Word to come near your Kennel no more; I was never in such a confounded Pickle since I was born.* *Sirrah*, replied the *Spider*, *if it were not for breaking an old Custom in our Family, never to stir abroad against an Enemy, I should come and teach you better Manners. I pray, have Patience*, said the *Bee*, *or you will Spend your Substance, and for ought I see you may stand in need of it all, towards the Repair of your House.* *Rogue, Rogue*, replied the *Spider*, *yet, methinks, you should have more Respect to a Person, whom all the World allows to be so much your Betters.* By *my Truth*, said the *Bee*, *the Comparison will amount to a very good Jest, and you will do me a Favour to let me know the Reason, that all the World is pleased to use in so hopeful a Dispute.* At this, the *Spider*, having swelled himself into the Size and Posture of a Disputant, began his Argument in the true Spirit of Controversy, with a Resolution to be heartily scurrilous and angry, to urge on his own Reasons, without the least Regard to the Answers or Objections of his Opposite; and fully predetermined in his Mind against all Conviction.

NOT

NOT to disparage myself, said he, by the Comparison with such a Rascal; what art thou but a Vagabond, without House or Home, without Stock or Inheritance? born to no Possession of your own, but a Pair of Wings, and a Drone-Pipe. Your Livelihood is an universal Plunder upon Nature; a Freebooter over Fields and Gardens; and, for the Sake of Stealing, will rob a Nettle as readily as a Violet. Whereas I am a domestic Animal, furnished with a native Stock within myself. This large Castle (to shew my Improvements in the Mathematicks) is all built with my own Hand, and the Materials extracted altogether out of my own Person.

I am glad, answered the Bee, to hear you grant, at least, that I am come honestly by my Wings and my Voice; for then, it seems, I am obliged to Heaven alone for my Flights and my Musick; and Providence would never have bestowed on me two such Gifts, without designing them for the noblest Ends. I visit, indeed, all the Flowers and Blossoms of the Field and the Garden; but whatever I collect from thence, enriches myself, without the least Injury to their Beauty, their Smell, or their Taste. Now, for you and your Skill in Architecture, and other Mathematicks, I have little to say: In that Building of yours, there might, for ought I know, have been Labour and Method enough; but, by woful Experience for us both, it is too plain the Materials are nought, and, I hope, you will henceforth take Warning; and consider Duration and Matter as well as Method and Art. You boast, indeed, of being obliged to no other Creature, but of drawing and spinning out all from yourself; that is to say, if we may judge of the Liquor in the Vessel by what issues out, you possess a good plentiful Store of Dirt and Poison in your Breast; and although I would by no means lessen or disparage your genuine Stock of either, yet I doubt you are somewhat obliged for an Increase of both to a little foreign Assistance. Your inherent Portion of Dirt doth not fail of Acquisitions, by Sweepings exhaled from below; and one Insect furnishes you with a Share of Poison to destroy another.

another. So that, in short, the Question comes all to this, Whether is the nobler Being of the two, That, which by a lazy Contemplation of four Inches round, by an overweening Pride, which, feeding and engendering on itself, turns all into Excrement and Venom, producing nothing at all but Flybane and a Cob-web; or That, which, by an universal Range, with long Search, much Study, true Judgment, and Distinction of Things, brings home Honey and Wax.

THIS Dispute was managed with such Eagerness, Clamour, and Warmth, that the two Parties of Books in Arms below stood silent a while, waiting in Suspence what would be the Issue; which was not long undetermined: For the Bee, grown impatient at so much Loss of Time, fled strait away to a Bed of Roses, without looking for a Reply; and left the Spider, like an Orator, collected in himself, and just prepared to burst out.

It happened upon this Emergency, that *Æsop* broke Silence first. He had been of late most barbarously treated by a strange Effect of the Regent's Humanity, who had tore off his Title-Page, sorely defaced one half of his Leaves, and chained him fast among a Shelf of *Moderns*; where soon discovering how high the Quarrel was like to proceed, he tried all his Arts, and turned himself to a thousand Forms; at length, in the borrowed Shape of an *Ass*, the Regent mistook him for a *Modern*; by which means, he had Time and Opportunity to escape to the *Antients*, just when the Spider and the Bee were entering into their Contest; to which he gave his Attention with a World of Pleasure; and, when it was ended, swore in the loudest Key, that in all his Life he had never known two Cases so parallel and adapt to each other, as That in the Window, and This upon the Shelves. The Disputants, said he, have admirably managed the Dispute between them, have taken in the full Strength of all that is to be said on both Sides, and exhausted the Substance of every Argument pro and con. It is but to adjust the Reason-

ings

ings of both to the present Quarrel, then to compare and apply the Labours and Fruits of each, as the Bee has learnedly deduced them, and we shall find the Conclusion fall plain and close upon the Moderns and Us. For, pray, Gentlemen, was ever any Thing so Modern as the Spider in his Air, his Turns, and his Paradoxes? He argues in the Behalf of You his Brethren, and Himself, with many Boastings of his native Stock, and great Genius; that he spins and spits wholly from himself, and scorns to own any Obligation or Assistance from without. Then he displays to you his great Skill in Architecture, and Improvement in the Mathematicks. To all this, the Bee, as an Advocate retained by us the Antients, thinks fit to answer, That if one may judge of the great Genius or Inventions of the Moderns, by what they have produced, you will hardly have the Countenance to bear you out in boasting of either. Erect your Schemes with as much Method and Skill as you please; yet, if the Materials be nothing but Dirt, spun out of your own Entrails (the Guts of Modern Brains) the Edifice will conclude at last in a Cobweb; the Duration of which, like that of other Spiders Webs, may be imputed to their being forgotten, or neglected, or hid in a Corner. For any Thing else of Genuine that the Moderns may pretend to, I cannot recollect; unless it be a large Vein of Wrangling and Satyr, much of a Nature and Substance with the Spider's Poison; which, however, they pretend to spit wholly out of themselves, is improved by the same Arts, by feeding upon the Insects and Vermin of the Age. As for Us, the Antients, We are content with the Bee, to pretend to nothing of our own, beyond our Wings and our Voice; that is to say, our Flights and our Language: For the rest, whatever we have got has been by infinite Labour, and Search, and ranging through every Corner of Nature: The Difference is, that instead of Dirt and Poison we have rather chose to fill our Hives with Honey and Wax, thus furnishing Mankind with the two noblest of Things, which are Sweetness and Light.

It is wonderful to conceive the Tumult arisen among the *Books*, upon the Close of this long Descant of *Æsop*. Both Parties took the Hint, and heightened their Animosities so on a sudden, that they resolved it should come to a Battle. Immediately, the two main Bodies withdrew under their several Ensigns to the farther Parts of the Library, and there entered into Cabals, and Consults upon the present Emergency. The *Moderns* were in very warm Debates upon the Choice of their *Leaders*, and nothing less than the Fear impending from their Enemies could have kept them from Mutinies upon this Occasion. The Difference was greatest among the *Horse*, where every private *Trooper* pretended to the chief Command, from *Tasso* and *Milton*, to *Dryden* and *Withers*. The *Light-horse* were commanded by *Cowley* and *Despreaux*. There came the *Bow-men* under their valiant Leaders, *Des-Cartes*, *Gassendi*, and *Hobbes*, whose Strength was such, that they could shoot their Arrows beyond the *Atmosphere*, never to fall down again, but turn, like that of *Evander*, into *Meteors*, or like the *Cannon-ball* into *Stars*. *Paracelsus* brought a Squadron of *Stink-Pot-Flingers* from the snowy Mountains of *Rhætia*. There came a vast Body of *Dragoons*, of different Nations, under the leading of *Harvey*, their great *Aga*; Part armed with *Scythes*, the Weapons of Death; Part with *Launces* and long *Knives*, all steeped in *Poison*; Part shot *Bullets* of a most malignant Nature, and used *white Powder*, which infallibly killed without Report. There came several Bodies of *heavy-armed Foot*, all *Mercenaries*, under the Ensigns of *Guiccardine*, *Darvila*, *Polydore Virgil*, *Buchanan*, *Mariana*, *Gambden*, and others. The *Engineers* were commanded by *Regiomontanus* and *Wilkins*. The rest were a confused Multitude, led by *Scotus*, *Aquinas*, and *Bellarmino*, of mighty Bulk and Stature, but without either Arms, Courage, or Discipline. In the last Place, came

came infinite Swarms of * *Calones*, a disorderly Rout led by *Lestrangle*; Rogues and Raggamuffins, that follow the Camp for nothing but the Plunder; all without *Coats* to cover them.

THE Army of the *Antients* was much fewer in Number; *Homer* led the *Horse*, and *Pindar* the *Light-Horse*; *Euclid* was chief *Engineer*: *Plato* and *Aristotle* commanded the *Bo-w-mèn*, *Herodotus* and *Livy* the *Foot*, *Hippocrates* the *Dragoons*. The *Allies*, led by *Vossius* and *Temple*, brought up the Rear.

ALL Things violently tending to a decisive Battle, *Fame*, who much frequented, and had a large Apartment formerly assigned her in the *Regal Library*, fled up straight to *Jupiter*, to whom she delivered a faithful Account of all that passed between the two Parties below, (for, among the Gods, she always tells Truth.) *Jove*, in great Concern, convoketh a Council in the *Milky-Way*. The Senate assembled, he declares the Occasion of convening them; a bloody Battle just impendent between two mighty Armies of *Antient* and *Modern* Creatures, called *Books*, wherein the Celestial Interest was but too deeply concerned. *Momus*, the Patron of the *Moderns*, made an excellent Speech in their Favour, which was answered by *Pallas*, the Protectress of the *Antients*. The Assembly was divided in their Affections, when *Jupiter* commanded the Book of Fate to be laid before him. Immediately were brought by *Mercury* three large Volumes in Folio, containing Memoirs of all Things past, present, and to come. The Clasps were of Silver double gilt; the Covers of celestial Turkey Leather, and the Paper such as here on Earth might almost pass for Vellum. *Jupiter*, having silently read the Decree, would communicate the Import to none, but presently shut up the Book.

O 2

WITHOUT

* *These are Pamphlets, which are not bound or covered.*

WITHOUT the Doors of this Assembly there attended a vast Number of light, nimble Gods, menial Servants to *Jupiter*: These are his ministering Instruments in all Affairs below. They travel in a Caravan, more or less together, and are fastened to each other like a Link of Gally-slaves, by a light Chain, which passeth from them to *Jupiter's* great Toe: And yet, in receiving or delivering a Message, they may never approach above the lowest Step of his Throne, where he and they whisper to each other through a long hollow Trunk. These Deities are called by mortal Men *Accidents* or *Events*; but the Gods call them *Second Causes*. *Jupiter* having delivered his Message to a certain Number of these Divinities, they flew immediately down to the Pinnacle of the Regal Library, and, consulting a few Minutes, entered unseen, and disposed the Parties according to their Orders.

MEAN while, *Momus* fearing the worst, and calling to mind an antient Prophecy, which bore no very good Face to his Children the *Moderns*, bent his Flight to the Region of a malignant Deity, called *Criticism*. She dwelt on the Top of a snowy Mountain in *Nova Zembla*; there *Momus* found her extended in her Den, upon the Spoils of numberless Volumes half devoured. At her right Hand sat *Ignorance*, her Father and Husband, blind with Age; at her left, *Pride* her Mother, dressing her up in the Scraps of Paper herself had torn. There was *Opinion* her Sister, light of Foot, hoodwinked, and headstrong, yet giddy, and perpetually turning. About her played her Children, *Noise* and *Impudence*, *Dulness* and *Vanity*, *Positiveness*, *Pedantry*, and *Ill-Manners*. The Goddess herself had Claws like a Cat; her Head, and Ears, and Voice, resembled those of an *Ass*; her Teeth fallen out before; her Eyes turned inward, as if she looked only upon herself; her Diet was the overflowing of her own Gall; her *Spleen* was so large, as to stand prominent like

like a Dug of the first Rate, nor wanted Excre-
scencies in form of Teats, at which a Crew of ug-
ly Monsters were greedily sucking; and, what is
wonderful to conceive, the Bulk of Spleen encreased
faster than the Sucking could diminish it. *Goddess*,
said *Momus*, can you sit idly here, while our devout
Worshippers, the *Moderns*, are this Minute entering
into a Battle, and, perhaps, now lying under the
Swords of their Enemies, who then hereafter will
ever sacrifice, or build Altars to our Divinities? Haste
therefore to the British Isle, and, if possible, prevent
their Destruction, while I make Factions among the
Gods, and gain them over to our Party.

MOMUS, having thus delivered himself, stayed
not for an Answer, but left the *Goddess* to her own
Resentment: Up she rose in a Rage, and, as it is
the Form upon such Occasions, began a Soliloquy,
It is I (said she) who gave Wisdom to the Infants
and Idiots; by me Children grow wiser than their
Parents. By me Beaux become Politicians, and
Schoolboys Judges of Philosophy. By me Sophisters
debate, and conclude upon the Depths of Knowledge;
and Coffee-house Wits instinct by me can correct an
Author's Style, and display his minute Errors, with-
out understanding a Syllable of his Matter or his Lan-
guage. By me Striplings spend their Judgment, as
they do their Estate, before it comes into their Hands.
It is I, who have deposed Wit and Knowledge from
their Empire over Poetry, and advanced myself in
their stead. And shall a few upstart Antients dare
oppose me?----But come, my aged Parents, and you
my Children dear, and thou my beauteous Sister; let us
ascend my Chariot, and haste to assist our devout Mo-
derns, who are now sacrificing to us a Hecatomb,
as I perceive by that grateful Smell, which from thence
reaches my Nostrils.

THE *Goddess* and her Train having mounted
the Chariot, which was drawn by tame Geese, flew
over infinite Regions, shedding her Influence in

due Places, till at length she arrived at her beloved Island of *Britain*; but in hovering over its Metropolis, what Blessings did she not let fall upon her Seminaries of *Grisham* and *Covent-Garden*? And now she reached the fatal Plain of *St. James's Library*, at what Time the two Armies were upon the Point to engage; where entering with all her Caravan unseen, and landing upon a Case of Shelves, now desert, but once inhabited by a Colony of *Virtuosos*, she stayed a while to observe the Posture of both Armies.

BUT here, the tender Cares of a Mother began to fill her Thoughts, and move in her Breast. For, at the Head of a Troop of *modern Bow-men*, she cast her Eyes upon her Son *Wotton*; to whom the Fates had assigned a very short Thread. *Wotton*, a young Hero, whom an unknown Father of mortal Race, begot by stolen Embraces with this Goddess. He was the darling of his Mother, above all her Children, and she resolved to go and comfort him. But first, according to the good old Custom of Deities, she cast about to change her Shape, for fear the Divinity of her Countenance might dazzle his mortal Sight, and over-charge the rest of his Senses. She therefore gathered up her Person into an *Octavo* Compass: Her Body grew white and arid, and split in Pieces with Driness; the thick turned into Pastboard, and the thin into Paper, upon which her Parents and Children artfully strewed a black Juice or Decoction of Gall and Soot, in Form of Letters; her Head, and Voice, and Spleen, kept their primitive Form; and that which before was a Cover of Skin did still continue so. In which Guise she marched on towards the *Moderns*, undistinguishable in Shape and Dress from the *Divine Bently*, *Wotton's* dearest Friend. *Brave Wotton*, said the Goddess, *Why do our Troops stand idle here, to spend their present Vigour and Opportunity of this Day? Away let us haste to the Generals*

als, and advise to give the Onset immediately. Having spoke thus, she took the ugliest of her Monsters, full glutted from her Spleen, and flung it invisibly into his Mouth; which, flying strait up into his Head, squeezed out his Eye-balls, gave him a distorted Look, and half overturned his Brain. Then she privately ordered two of her beloved Children, *Dulness* and *Ill-Manners*, closely to attend his Person in all Encounters. Having thus accoutred him she vanished in a Mist, and the Hero perceived it was the Goddess his Mother.

THE destined Hour of Fate being now arrived, the Fight began; whereof before I dare adventure to make a particular Description, I must, after the Example of other Authors, petition for a hundred Tongues, and Mouths, and Hands, and Pens; which would all be too little to perform so immense a Work. Say, Goddess, that presideest over History, who it was first advanced in the Field of Battle. *Paracelsus*, at the Head of his *Dragoons*, observing *Galen* in the adverse Wing, darted his Javelin with a mighty Force, which the brave *Antient* received upon his Shield, the Point breaking in the second Fold.

* * * * * *His pauca defunt.*

They bore the wounded *Agas* on their Shields to his Chariot

* * * * * *Defunt nonnulla.*

THEN *Aristotle*, observing *Bacon* advance with a furious Mien, drew his Bow to the Head, and let fly his Arrow, which missed the valiant *Modern*, and went hissing over his Head; but *Des Cartes* it hit: The Steel Point quickly found a Defect in his *Head-piece*; it pierced the Leather and the Pastboard, and went in at his right Eye. The Torture of the Pain whirled the valiant *Bow-man* round, until Death, like a Star of superior Influence, drew

Ingens hiatus hic
in MS.

drew him into his own *Vortex*.

* * * * *

when *Homer* appeared at the Head of the Cavalry, mounted on a furious Horse, with Difficulty managed by the Rider himself, but which no other Mortal durst approach: He rode among the Enemies Ranks, and bore down all before him. Say, Goddess, whom he slew first, and whom he slew last. First, *Gondibert* advanced against him, clad in heavy Armour, and mounted on a staid sober Gelding, not so famed for his Speed as his Docility in kneeling, whenever his Rider would mount or alight. He had made a

* *Vide Homer* never leave the Field, until he had spoiled * *Homer* of his Armour;

Madman, who had never once seen the Wearer, nor understood his Strength. Him *Homer* overthrew, Horse and Man to the Ground, there to be trampled and choaked in the Dirt. Then, with a long Spear, he slew *Denham*, a stout *Modern*, who from his † Father's Side derived his Lineage from *Apollo*, but his Mother was of mortal Race. He fell, and bit the Earth. The Celestial Part of him *Apollo* took, and made it a Star, but the Terrestrial lay wallowing upon the Ground. Then *Homer* slew *Wesley* with a Kick of his Horse's Heel; he took *Perrault* by mighty Force out of his Saddle, then hurled him at *Fontenelle*, with the same Blow dashing out both their Brains.

On the left Wing of the Horse, *Virgil* appeared in shining Armour, compleatly fitted to his Body; he was mounted on a dapple grey Steed, the Slowness

† *Sir John Denham's Poems are very unequal, extremely Good, and very Indifferent, so that his Detractors said, he was not the real Author of Cooper's-Hill.*

ness of whose Pace was an Effect of the highest Mettle and Vigour. He cast his Eye on the adverse Wing, with a Desire to find an Object worthy of Valour, when, behold, upon a sorrel Gelding of a monstrous Size, appeared a Foe, issuing from among the thickest of the Enemy's Squadrons, but his Speed was less than his Noise; for his Horse, old and lean, spent the Dregs of his Strength in a high Trot, which, although it made slow Advances, yet caused a loud clashing of his Armour, terrible to hear. The two Cavaliers had now approached within the Throw of a Lance, when the Stranger desired a Parley, and lifting up the Vizard of his Helmet, a Face hardly appeared from within, which, after a Pause, was known for that of the renowned *Dryden*. The brave *Antient* suddenly started, as one possessed with Surprize and Disappointment together: For, the Helmet was nine times too large for the Head, which appeared situate far in the hinder Part, even like the Lady in a Lobster, or like a Mouse under a Canopy of State, or like a shriveled Beau from within the Pent-house of a modern Perriwig: And the Voice was suited to the Visage, sounding weak and remote. *Dryden* in a long Harangue soothed up the good *Antient*, called him *Father*, and, by a large Deduction of Genealogies, made it plainly appear, that they were nearly related. Then he humbly proposed an Exchange of Armour, as a lasting Mark of Hospitality between them. *Virgil* consented (for the Goddess *Diffidence* came unseen, and cast a Mist before his Eyes) *Vide Homer*. although his was of Gold, and cost a hundred Beeves, the other's but of rusty Iron. However this glittering Armour became the *Modern* yet worse than his own. Then they agreed to exchange Horses; but when it came to the Trial, *Dryden* was afraid, and utterly unable to mount

Alter hiatus in mount. * * * * *
MS. * * * * *

Lucan appeared upon a fiery Horse, of admirable Shape, but head-strong, bearing the Rider where he list, over the Field; he made a mighty Slaughter among the Enemy's Horse; which Destruction to stop, *Blackmore* a famous *Modern* (but one of the *Mercenaries*) strenuously opposed himself, and darted a Javelin, with a strong Hand, which, falling short of its Mark, struck deep in the Earth. Then *Lucan* threw a Lance; but *Æsculapius* came unseen, and turned off the Point. *Brave Modern*, said *Lucan*, *I perceive some God protects you, for never did my Arm so deceive me before: But what Mortal can contend with a God? Therefore let us fight no longer, but present Gifts to each other.* *Lucan* then bestowed the *Modern* a Pair of Spurs, and *Blackmore* gave *Lucan* a Bridle. * * * * *

Pauca desunt. * * * * *

Creech; but, the Goddess *Dulness* took a Cloud, formed into the Shape of *Horace*, armed and mounted, and placed it in a flying Posture before him. Glad was the Cavalier to begin a Combat with a flying Foe, and pursued the Image, threatening loud: till at last it led him to the peaceful Bower of his Father *Ogleby*, by whom he was disarmed, and assigned to his Repose.

THEN *Pindar* flew ----, and ----, and *Oldham*, and ---, and *Afra* the *Amazon* light of Foot; never advancing in a direct Line, but wheeling with incredible Agility and Force, he made a terrible Slaughter among the Enemy's *Light-horse*. Him when *Cowley* observed, his generous Heart burned within him, and he advanced against the fierce *Antient*, imitating his Address, and Pace, and Career, as well as the Vigour of his Horse, and his own Skill would allow. When the two Cavaliers had approached

approached within the Length of three Javelins; first *Cowley* threw a Lance, which missed *Pindar*, and passing into the Enemy's Ranks, fell ineffectual to the Ground. Then *Pindar* darted a Javelin so large and weighty, that scarce a Dozen *Cavaliers*, as *Cavaliers* are in our degenerate Days, could raise it from the Ground: Yet he threw it with Ease, and it went by an unerring Hand, singing through the Air; nor could the *Modern* have avoided present Death, if he had not luckily opposed the Shield that had been given him by *Venus*. And now both Heroes drew their Swords, but the *Modern* was so aghast and disordered, that he knew not where he was; his Shield dropped from his Hands, thrice he fled, and thrice he could not escape; at last he turned, and lifting up his Hands, in the Posture of a Suppliant, Godlike *Pindar*, said he, spare my Life, and possess my Horse with these Arms; besides the Ransom which my Friends will give, when they bear I am alive, and your Prisoner. Dog, said *Pindar*, let your Ransom stay with your Friends; but your Carcase shall be left for the Fowls of the Air, and the Beasts of the Field. With that he raised his Sword, and with a mighty Stroke cleaved the wretched *Modern* in twain, the Sword pursuing the Blow; and one half lay panting on the Ground, to be trod in Pieces by the Horses Feet, the other half was born by the frightened Steed through the Field. This * *Venus* took, and washed it seven Times in *Ambrosia*, then struck it thrice with a Sprig of *Amarant*; upon which the Leather grew round and soft, and the Leaves turned into Feathers, and being gilded before continued gilded still; so it became a *Dove*, and she harnessed it to her

* I do not approve the Author's Judgment in this, for I think *Cowley's Pindaricks* are much preferable to his *Mistress*.

her Chariot.

*Hiatus valde de-
fendus in MS.*

DAY being far spent, and the numerous Forces of the *Moderns* half inclining to a Retreat, there issued forth from a Squadron of their

The Episode heavy armed Foot a Captain, whose of Bentley Name was Bentley; in Person, the and Wotton. most deformed of all the *Moderns*;

Tall, without Shape or Comeliness; Large, but without Strength or Proportion. His Armour was patched up of a thousand incoherent Pieces; and the Sound of it, as he marched, was loud and dry, like that made by the Fall of a Sheet of Lead, which an *Etesian* Wind bloweth suddenly down from the Roof of some Steeple. His Helmet was of old rusty Iron, but the Vizard was Brass, which, tainted by his Breath, corrupted into Copperas, nor wanted Gall from the same Fountain; so that, whenever provoked by Anger or Labour, an atramentous Quality, of most malignant Nature, was seen to distil from his Lips. In his † right Hand he grasped a Flail, and (that he might never be unprovided of an *offensive* Weapon) a Vessel of *Ordure* in his left: Thus, compleatly armed, he advanced with a slow and heavy Pace, where the *modern* Chiefs were holding a Consult upon the Sum of Things; who, as he came on-wards, laughed to behold his crooked Leg, and hump Shoulder, which his Boot and Armour vainly endeavouring to hide, were forced to comply with, and expose. The Generals made use of him for his Talent of Railing; which, kept within Govern-ment, proved frequently of great Service to their Cause,

† The Person here spoken of is famous for letting fly at every Body without Distinction, and using mean and foul Scurrilities.

Cause, but at other Times did more Mischief than Good; for at the least Touch of Offence, and often without any at all, he would, like a wounded Elephant, convert it against his Leaders.

Such, at this Juncture, was the Disposition of Bentley, grieved to see the Enemy prevail, and dissatisfied with every Body's Conduct but his own. He humbly gave the *modern* Generals to understand, that he conceived with great Submission, they were all a Pack of Rogues, and Fools, and Sons of Whores, and d--mned Cowards, and confounded Loggerheads, and illiterate Whelps, and nonsensical Scoundrels: That if himself had been constituted General, those presumptuous Dogs, the Antients, would long before this have been beaten out of the Field. You, said he, sit here idle, but *Vide Homer.* when I, or any other valiant Modern, kill an Enemy, you are sure to

seize the Spoil. But I will not march one Foot against the Foe, till you all swear to me, that whomever I take or kill, his Arms I shall quietly possess. Bentley having spoke thus, Scaliger bestowing him a sour Look; Miscreant Prater, said he, Eloquent only in thine own Eyes, thou railest without Wit, or Truth, or Discretion. The Malignity of thy Temper perverteth Nature, thy Learning maketh thee more barbarous, thy Study of Humanity more Inhuman; thy Converse amongst Poets more grovelling, miry, and dull. All Arts of civilizing others render thee rude and untractable; Courts have taught thee ill Manners, and polite Conversation has finished thee a Pedant. Besides, a greater Coward burtheneth not the Army. But never despond, I pass my Word, whatever Spoil thou takest shall certainly be thy own; although, I hope, that vile Carcase will first become a Prey to Kites and Worms.

BENTLEY durst not reply; but, half choaked with Spleen and Rage, withdrew, in full Resolution of performing some great Atchievement.

With him, for his Aid and Companion, he took his beloved *Wotton*; resolving, by Policy or Surprise, to attempt some neglected Quarter of the *Antients* Army. They began their March over Carcasses of their slaughtered Friends; then to the Right of their own Forces; then wheeled Northward, until they came to *Aldrovandus's* Tomb, which they passed on the Side of the declining Sun. And now they arrived with Fear towards the Enemy's Outguards; looking about, if, haply, they might spy the Quarters of the wounded, or some straggling Sleepers, unarmed and remote from the rest: As when two *Mungrel-Curs*, whom *native Greediness*, and *domestick Want*, provoke, and join in Partnership, although fearful, nightly to invade the Folds of some rich Grazier; they, with Tails depressed, and lolling Tongues, creep soft and slow; meanwhile, the conscious *Moon*, now in her *Zenith*, on their guilty Heads, darteth perpendicular Rays; nor dare they bark, although much provoked at her refulgent Visage, whether seen in Puddle by Reflexion, or in Sphere direct; but one surveys the region round, while the other scouts the Plain, if, haply, to discover, at Distance from the Flock, some Carcase half devoured, the Refuse of gorged Wolves, or ominous Ravens. So marched this lovely loving Pair of Friends, nor with less Fear and Circumspection; when, at Distance, they might perceive two shining Suits of Armour, hanging upon an Oak, and the Owners not far off in a profound Sleep. The two Friends drew Lots, and the pursuing of this Adventure fell to *Bentley*; on he went, and in his Van *Confusion* and *Amaze*; while *Horror* and *Affright* brought up the Rear. As he came near; behold, two Heroes of the *Antients* Army, *Phalaris* and *Æsop*, lay fast asleep: *Bentley* would fain have dispatched them both, and, stealing close, aimed his Flail at *Phalaris's* Breast. But, then, the Goddess *Affright* interposing, caught the

the *Modern* in her icy Arms, and dragged him from the Danger she foresaw; for both the dormant Heroes happened to turn at the same Instant, although soundly sleeping, and busy in a Dream.

* For *Phalaris* was just that Minute dreaming, how a most vile *Poetaster* had lampooned him, and how he had got him roaring in his *Bull*. And *Æsop* dreamed, that as he and the *antient Chiefs* were lying on the Ground, a *wild Ass*, broke loose, ran about trampling, and kicking, and dunging in their Faces. *Bentley*, leaving the two Heroes asleep, seized on both their Armours, and withdrew in quest of his Darling *Wotton*.

He, in the mean time, had wandered long in search of some Enterprize, until at length he arrived at a small *Rivulet*, that issued from a Fountain hard by, called, in the Language of mortal Men, *Helicon*. Here he stopped, and, parched with Thirst, resolved to allay it in this limpid Stream. Thrice, with profane Hands, he essayed to raise the Water to his Lips, and thrice it slipped all through his Fingers. Then he stooped prone on his Breast, but e're his Mouth had kissed the liquid Chrystal, *Apollo* came, and, in the Channel, held his *Shield* betwixt the *Modern* and the Fountain, so that he drew up nothing but *Mud*. For, although no Fountain on Earth can compare with the Clearness of *Helicon*, yet there lieth at Bottom a thick Sediment of *Slime* and *Mud*: for so *Apollo* begged of *Jupiter*, as a Punishment to those who durst attempt to taste it with unhallowed Lips, and for a Lesson to all, not to draw too deep, or far from the Spring.

At the Fountain Head, *Wotton* discerned two Heroes: The one he could not distinguish, but the other was soon known for *Temple*, General of the *Allies* to the *Antients*. His Back was turned, and

P 2

he

* This is according to *Homer*, who tells the Dreams of those that were killed in their Sleep.

he was employed in drinking large Draughts in his Helmet from the Fountain, where he had withdrawn himself to rest from the Toils of the War. *Wotton*, observing him, with quaking Knees, and trembling Hands, spoke thus to himself: *Oh, that I could kill this Destroyer of our Army, what Renown should I purchase among the Chiefs! But to issue out*

against him, Man against Man, Shield
Vide Homer. against Shield, and Lance against
Lance; what Modern of us dare?

For he fighteth like a God, and Pallas or Apollo are ever at his Elbow. But, Oh, Mother! if what Fame reporteth be true, that I am the Son of so great a Goddess, grant me to hit Temple with this Lance, that the Stroke may send him to Hell, and that I may return in Safety and Triumph, laden with his Spoils.

The first Part of his Prayer the Gods granted, at the Intercession of his Mother and of *Momus*; but the rest, by a perverse Wind sent from Fate, was scattered in the Air. Then *Wotton* grasped his Lance, and, brandishing it thrice over his Head, darted it with all his Might, the Goddess his Mother, at the same Time, adding Strength to his Arm. Away the Lance went hissing, and reached even to the Belt of the averted *Antient*, upon which lightly grazing, it fell to the Ground. *Temple* neither felt the Weapon touch him, nor heard it fall; and *Wotton* might have escaped to his Army, with the Honour of having remitted his Lance against so great a Leader, unrevenged; But *Apollo* enraged, that a Javelin, flung by the Assistance of so foul a Goddess, should pollute his Fountain, put on the Shape of -----, and softly came to young *Boyle*, who then accompanied *Temple*: He pointed, first to the Lance, then to the distant *Modern* that flung it, and commanded the young Hero to take immediate Revenge. *Boyle*, clad in a Suit of Armour which had been given him by all the Gods, immediately advanced against the trembling Foe, who

now

now fled before him, as a young Lion, in the *Libyan Plains*, or *Araby Desert*, sent by his aged Sire to hunt for Prey, or Health, or Exercise; he scours along, wishing to meet some Tiger from the Mountains, or a furious Boar: If chance a wild Ass, with Brayings importune, affronteth his Ear, the generous Beast, although loathing to distain his Claws with Blood so vile, yet much provoked at the offensive Noise, which *Eccho*, foolish Nymph, like her ill-judging Sex, repeateth much louder, and with more Delight than *Philomela's* Song, he vindicates the Honour of the Forest, and hunts the noisy, long-eared Animal. So *Wotton* fled, so *Boyle* pursued. But *Wotton* heavy-armed, and slow of Foot, began to slack his Course; when his Lover *Bentley* appeared, returning laden with the Spoils of the two sleeping Antients. *Boyle* observed him well, and soon discovering the Helmet and Shield of *Phalaris*, his Friend, both which he had lately with his own Hands new polished and gilded; Rage sparkled in his Eyes, and leaving his Pursuit after *Wotton*, he furiously rushed on against this new Approacher. Fain would he be revenged on both; but both now fled different Ways: * And as a Woman in a little House, that *Vide Homer*. gets a painful Livelihood by Spinning; if chance her Geese be scattered o'er the Common, she courseth round the Plain from side to side, compelling here and there the Stragglers to the Flock; they cackle loud, and flutter o'er the Champain. So *Boyle* pursued, so fled this Pair of Friends; finding at length their Flight was vain, they bravely joined, and drew themselves in *Phalanx*.

P 3

lanx.

* This is also after the manner of *Homer*; the Woman's getting a painful Livelihood by Spinning hath nothing to do with the Similitude, nor would be excusable without such Authority.

lanx. First, *Bentley* threw a Spear with all his Force, hoping to pierce the Enemy's Breast; but *Pallas* came unseen, and in the Air took off the Point, and clapped on one of *Lead*, which, after a dead Bang against the Enemy's Shield, fell blunted to the Ground. Then *Boyle*, observing well his Time, took a Lance of wondrous Length and Sharpness; and as this Pair of Friends compacted stood close side to side, he wheeled him to the right, and with unusual Force darted the Weapon. *Bentley* saw his Fate approach, and flanking down his Arms close to his Ribs, hoping to save his Body, in went the Point, passing through Arm and Side, nor stopped, or spent its Force, until it had also pierced the valiant *Wotton*, who, going to sustain his dying Friend, shared his Fate. As when a skilful Cook hath trussed a Brace of *Wood-cocks*, he, with Iron Skewers, pierces the tender Sides of both their Legs and Wings close pinioned to their Ribs; so was this Pair of Friends trans-fixed, until down they fell, joined in their Lives, joined in their Deaths; so closely joined, that *Charon* would mistake them both for one, and waft them over *Styx* for half his Fare. Farewel, beloved, loving Pair; few Equals have you left behind: And happy and immortal shall you be, if all my Wit and Eloquence can make you.

AND NOW

	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*			

Desunt cetera.

his
ut
he
a
ed
his
nd
ed
nt,
on.
wn
his
rm
l it
to
As
od-
der
ed
ns-
es,
nat
aft
lo-
nd:
my
*
*

A

A
DISCOURSE

CONCERNING THE
Mechanical Operation
OF THE
S P I R I T.
IN A
L E T T E R
TO A
F R I E N D.

A
F R A G M E N T.

DUBLIN:
Printed in the Year MDCCCLVI.

THE
BOOKSELLER'S
Advertisement.

THE following Discourse came into my Hands perfect and entire. But there being several Things in it which the present Age would not very well bear, I kept it by me some Years, resolving it should never see the Light. At length, by the Advice and Assistance of a judicious Friend, I retrenched those Parts that might give most Offence, and have now ventured to publish the Remainder: Concerning the Author, I am wholly ignorant; neither can I conjecture, whether it be the same with that of the two foregoing Pieces, the Original having been sent me at a different Time, and in a different Hand. The learned Reader will better determine; to whose Judgment I entirely submit it.

A
DISCOURSE

Concerning the
MECHANICAL OPERATION of the
SPIRIT, &c.

For T. H. Esquire, at his Chambers in the Academy
of the Beaux Espirts, in New-Holland.

S I R,

IT is now a good while since I have had in my Head something, not only very material, but absolutely necessary to my Health, that the World should be informed in. For, to tell you a Secret, I am able to *contain* it no longer. However

This Discourse is not altogether equal to the two Former, the best Parts of it being omitted; whether the Bookseller's Account be true, that he durst not print the rest, I know not, nor indeed is it easy to determine whether he may be relied on, in any Thing he says of this, or the former Treatises, only as to the Time they were writ in, which, however, appears more from the Discourses themselves than his Relation.

ever, I have been perplexed for some time, to resolve what would be the most proper Form to send it abroad in. To which End, I have three Days been coursing through *Westminster-hall*, and *St. Paul's Church-yard*, and *Fleetstreet* to peruse Titles; and I do not find any which holdeth so general a Vogue, as that of *A Letter to a Friend*: Nothing is more common than to meet with long Epistles addressed to Persons and Places, where, at first thinking, one would be apt to imagine it not altogether so necessary or convenient; such as, *a Neighbour at next Door*, *a mortal Enemy*, *a perfect Stranger*, or *a Person of Quality in the Clouds*; and these upon Subjects, in Appearance, the least proper for Conveyance by the Post; as, *long Schemes in Philosophy*; *dark and wonderful Mysteries of State*; *Laborious Dissertations in Criticism and Philosophy*, *Advice to Parliaments*, and the like.

Now, Sir, to proceed after the Method in present Wear. (For let me say what I will to the contrary, I am afraid you will publish this Letter, as soon as ever it cometh to your Hands;) I desire you will be my Witness to the World, 'how careless and sudden a Scribble it has been; That it was but Yesterday, when You and I began accidentally to fall into Discourse on this Matter: That I was not very well, when we parted; That the Post is in such Haste, I have had no manner of Time to digest it into Order, or correct the Style; and if any other modern Excuses, for Haste and Negligence, shall occur to you in reading, I beg you to insert them, faithfully promising they shall be thankfully acknowledged.

PRAY, Sir, in your next Letter to the *Iroquois Virtuosi*, do me the Favour to present my humble Service to that illustrious Body, and assure them, I shall send an Account of those *Phænomena*, as soon as we can determine them at *Gresham*.

I HAVE

I HAVE not had a Line from the *Literati* of *Tebinambou*, these three last Ordinaries.

AND NOW, Sir, having dispatched what I had to say of Forms, or of Business, let me intreat, you will suffer me to proceed upon my Subject; and to pardon me, if I make no further Use of the epistolary Stile, until I come to conclude.

SECTION. I.

IT is recorded of *Mahomet*, that, upon a Visit he was going to pay in *Paradise*, he had an Offer of several Vehicles to conduct him upwards; as fiery Chariots, winged Horses, and celestial Sedans; but he refused them all, and would be born to Heaven upon nothing but his *Ass*. Now, this Inclination of *Mahomet*, as singular as it seems, hath been since taken up by a great Number of devout *Christians*; and, doubtless, with very good Reason. For, since That *Arabian* is known to have borrowed a Moiety of his religious System from the *Christian* Faith; it is but just he should pay Reprisals to such as would challenge them; wherein the good People of *England*, to do them all Right, have not been backward. For, although there is not any other Nation in the World so plentifully provided with Carriages for that Journey, either as to Safety or Ease; yet there are Abundance of us, who will not be satisfied with any other Machine, beside this of *Mahomet*.

FOR my own Part, I must confess to bear a very singular Respect to this Animal, by whom I take human Nature to be most admirably held forth in all its Qualities as well as Operations: And, therefore,

fore, whatever in my small Reading occurs, concerning this our Fellow-Creature, I do never fail to set it down by way of Common-place; and when I have Occasion to write upon human Reason, Politicks, Eloquence, or Knowledge, I lay my *Memorandums* before me, and insert them with a wonderful Facility of Application. However, among all the Qualifications ascribed to this distinguished Brute, by antient or modern Authors, I cannot remember this Talent of bearing his Rider to Heaven hath been recorded for a Part of his Character, except in the two Examples mentioned already: Therefore, I conceive the Methods of this Art to be a Point of useful Knowledge in very few Hands, and which the learned World would gladly be better informed in: This is what I have undertaken to perform in the following Discourse. For, towards the Operation already mentioned, many peculiar Properties are required, both in the *Rider* and the *Ass*; which I shall endeavour to set in as clear a Light as I can,

BUT, because I am resolved, by all means, to avoid giving Offence to any Party whatever; I will leave off discoursing so closely to the *Letter* as I have hitherto done, and go on for the future by way of Allegory, although in such a manner, that the judicious Reader may, without much straining, make his Applications as often as he shall think fit. Therefore, if you please from henceforward, instead of the Term *Ass*, we shall make use of *gifted*, or *enlightened Teacher*; and the Word *Rider* we will exchange for that of *Fanatick Auditory*, or any other Denomination of the like Import. Having settled this weighty Point; the great Subject of Enquiry before us is to examine, by what Methods this *Teacher* arriveth at his *Gifts*, or *Spirit*, or *Light*; and by what Intercourse between him and his Assembly, it is cultivated and supported.

In all my Writings, I have had constant Regard to this great End, not to suit and apply them to particular

particular Occasions and Circumstances of Time, of Place, or of Person, but to calculate them for universal Nature, and Mankind in general. And of such Catholick Use I esteem this present Disquisition; for I do not remember any other Temper of Body, or Quality of Mind, wherein all Nations and Ages of the World have so unanimously agreed, as that of a *Fanatick* Strain, or Tincture of *Enthusiasm*; which improved by certain Persons or Societies of Men, and by them practised upon the rest, hath been able to produce Revolutions of the greatest Figure in History; as will soon appear to those who know any Thing of *Arabia*, *Persia*, *India*, or *China*, of *Morocco* and *Peru*: Farther, it hath possessed as great a Power in the Kingdom of Knowledge, where it is hard to assign one Art or Science, which hath not annexed to it some *Fanatick* Branch: Such are the *Philosopher's-Stone*; **The Grand Elixir*; the *Planetary Worlds*; the *Squaring of the Circle*; the *Summum bonum*; *Utopian Common-wealths*; with some others of less or subordinate Note; which all serve for nothing else, but to employ or amuse this Grain of *Enthusiasm*, dealt into every Composition.

* Some Writers hold them for the same, others not.

BUT, if this Plant hath found a Root in the Fields of *Empire*, and of *Knowledge*, it hath fixed deeper, and spread yet farther upon *Holy Ground*. Wherein, although it hath passed under the general Name of *Enthusiasm*, and perhaps arisen from the same Original, yet hath it produced certain Branches of a very different Nature, however often mistaken for each other. The Word in its universal Acceptation may be defined, *A lifting up of the Soul or its Faculties above Matter*. This Description will hold good in general; but I am only to understand it, as applied to *Religion*; wherein there are three general Ways of ejaculating the Soul,

Soul, or transporting it beyond the Sphere of Matter. The first is the immediate Act of God, and is called, *Prophecy* or *Inspiration*. The second is the immediate Act of the Devil, and is termed *Possession*. The third is the Product of natural Causes, the Effect of strong Imagination, Spleen, violent Anger, Fear, Grief, Pain, and the like. These three have been abundantly treated on by Authors, and therefore shall not employ my Enquiry. But the fourth Method of *Religious Enthusiasm*, or launching out of the Soul, as it is purely an Effect of Artifice and *Mechanick Operation*, hath been sparingly handled, or not at all, by any Writer; because, although it is an Art of great Antiquity, yet having been confined to few Persons, it long wanted the Advancements and Refinements, which it afterwards met with, since it hath grown so Epidemick, and fallen into so many cultivating Hands.

It is therefore upon this *Mechanical Operation of the Spirit*, that I mean to treat, as it is at present performed by our *British Workmen*. I shall deliver to the Reader the Result of many judicious Observations upon the Matter; tracing, as near as I can, the whole Course and Method of this *Trade*, producing parallel Instances, and relating certain Discoveries that have luckily fallen in my Way.

I HAVE said, that there is one Branch of *Religious Enthusiasm*, which is purely an Effect of Nature; whereas, the Part I mean to handle is wholly an Effect of Art, which, however, is inclined to work upon certain Natures and Constitutions, more than others. Besides, there is many an Operation, which in its Original was purely an Artifice, but, through a long Succession of Ages, hath grown to be natural. *Hippocrates* telleth us,

* *Macrocephali*.

that among our Ancestors, the *Scythians*, there was a Nation called

* *Long-heads*, which at first began by a Custom among Midwives and

Nurses

Nurses of molding, and squeezing, and bracing up the Heads of Infants; by which means, Nature, shut out at one Passage, was forced to seek another, and, finding Room above, shot upwards in the Form of a Sugar-Loaf; and being diverted that Way, for some Generations, at last found it out of herself, needing no Assistance from the Nurse's Hand. This was the Original of the *Scythian Long-heads*, and thus did Custom from being a second Nature proceed to be a first: To all which there is something very analogous amongst Us of this Nation, who are the undoubted Posterity of that refined People. For, in the Age of our Fathers, there arose a Generation of Men in this Island, called *Round-heads*, whose Race is now spread over three Kingdoms, yet, in its Beginning was merely an Operation of Art, produced by a Pair of Scizars, a Squeeze of the Face, and a black Cap. These Heads, thus formed into a perfect Sphere in all Assemblies, were most exposed to the View of the Female Sort, which did influence their Conceptions so effectually, that Nature, at last, took the Hint, and did it of herself; so that a *Round-head* hath been ever since as familiar a Sight among us, as a *Long-head* among the *Scythians*.

UPON these Examples, and others easy to produce, I desire the curious Reader to distinguish, First, between an Effect grown from *Art* into *Nature*, and one that is natural from its Beginning; Secondly, between an Effect wholly natural, and one which has only a natural Foundation, but where the Superstructure is entirely artificial. For the first and last of these I understand to come within the Districts of my Subject; and, having obtained these Allowances, they will serve to remove any Objections that may be raised hereafter against what I shall advance.

THE Practitioners of this famous Art proceed in general upon the following Fundamental: That, *the*

Corruption of the Senses is the Generation of the Spirit: Because the *Senses* in Men are so many Avenues to the Fort of *Reason*, which in this Operation is wholly blocked up. All Endeavours must be therefore used, either to divert, bind up, stupify, fluster, and amuse the *Senses*, or else to juggle them out of their Stations; and while they are either absent, or otherwise employed, or engaged in a Civil War against each other, the *Spirit* enters and performs its Part.

Now, the usual Methods of managing the *Senses* upon such Conjectures are what I shall be very particular in delivering, as far as it is lawful for me to do, but, having had the Honour to be initiated into the Mysteries of every Society, I desire to be excused from divulging any Rites, wherein the *Profane* must have no Part.

BUT here, before I can proceed farther, a very dangerous Objection must, if possible, be removed: For it is positively denied by certain Criticks, that the *Spirit* can by any means be introduced into an Assembly of Modern Saints, the Disparity being so great in many material Circumstances, between the Primitive Way of Inspiration, and that which is practised in the present Age. This they pretend to prove from the second Chapter of the *Acts*, where, comparing both, it appears; First, that the *Apostles were gathered together with one Accord in one Place*; by which is meant, an universal Agreement in Opinion, and Form of Worship; a Harmony (say they) so far from being found between any two Conventicles among Us, that it is in vain to expect it between any two Heads in the same. Secondly, the *Spirit* instructed the Apostles in the Gift of speaking several Languages; a Knowledge so remote from our Dealers in this Art, that they neither understand Propriety of Words, or Phrases in their own. Lastly, (say these Objectors) the Modern Artists do utterly exclude all Approaches of the *Spirit*, and bar up its antient
Way

Way of entering, by covering themselves so close, and so industriously a-top. For they will needs have it as a Point clearly gained, that the *Cloven Tongues* never sat upon the Apostles Heads, while their Hats were on.

Now, the Force of these Objections seemeth to consist in the different Acceptation of the Word, *Spirit*: Which if it be understood for a supernatural Assistance, approaching from without, the Objectors have Reason, and their Assertions may be allowed; but the *Spirit* we treat of here proceeding entirely from within, the Argument of these Adversaries is wholly eluded. And upon the same Account, our Modern Artificers find it an Expedient of absolute Necessity to cover their Heads as close as they can, in order to prevent Perspiration, than which nothing is observed to be a greater Spender of Mechanick Light, as we may, perhaps, farther shew in a convenient Place.

To proceed therefore upon the *Phænomenon* of *Spiritual Mechanism*, it is here to be noted, that in forming and working up the *Spirit* the Assembly hath a considerable Share, as well as the Preacher; the Method of this *Arcanum* is as follows. They violently strain their Eyeballs inward, half closing the Lids; then, as they sit, they are in a perpetual Motion of *See-saw*, making long Hums at proper Periods, and continuing the Sound at equal Height, chusing their Time in those Intermissions, while the Preacher is at Ebb. Neither is this Practice, in any Part of it, so singular or improbable, as not to be traced in distant Regions, from Reading and Observation. For, first, the

* *Jaguis*, or enlightened Saints of *India*, see all their Visions, by help of an acquired Straining and Pressure of the Eyes. Secondly, the

* *Bernier Mem. de Mogol.*

Art of *See-saw* on a Beam, and swinging by Session upon a Cord, in order to raise artincial Ex-

tacies

* *Guagini* tastes, hath been deriv'd to us from
Hist. Sarmat. our * *Scythian* Ancestors, where it
 is practis'd at this Day among the
 Women. Lastly, the whole Proceeding, as I have
 here related it, is performed by the Natives of
Ireland, with a considerable Improvement; and it
 is granted, that this noble Nation hath, of all
 others, admitted fewer Corruptions, and degene-
 rated least from the Purity of the old *Tartars*.
 Now, it is usual for a Knot of *Irish* Men and Wo-
 men, to abstract themselves from Matter, bind up
 all their Senses, grow visionary and spiritual, by
 Influence of a short Pipe of Tobacco, handed
 round the Company; each preserving the Smoke
 in his Mouth; until it cometh again to his Turn to
 take in fresh: At the same Time, there is a Con-
 cert of a continued gentle Hum, repeated and re-
 newed by Instinct, as Occasion requireth, and they
 move their Bodies up and down, to a Degree, that
 sometimes their Heads and Points lie parallel to
 the Horizon. Mean while, you may observe their
 Eyes turned up in the Posture of one, who endea-
 vours to keep himself awake; by which, and many
 other Symptoms among them, it manifestly ap-
 pears, that the Reasoning Faculties are all suspend-
 ed and superseded, that Imagination hath usurped
 the Seat, scattering a thousand Deliriums over the
 Brain. Returning from this Digression, I shall de-
 scribe the Methods by which the *Spirit* approacheth.
 The Eyes being disposed according to Art, at first,
 you can see nothing, but, after a short Pause, a small
 glimmering Light begins to appear, and dance be-
 fore you. Then, by frequently moving your Bo-
 dy up and down, you perceive the Vapours to as-
 cend very fast, until you are perfectly dosed and
 flustered like one who drinketh too much in a Mor-
 ning. Mean while, the Preacher is also at Work:
 He begins a loud Hum, which pierceth quite
 through; this is immediately returned by the Au-
 dience, and you find yourself prompted to imitate
 them

them, by a mere spontaneous Impulse, without knowing what you do. The *Interstitia* are duly filled up by the Preacher, to prevent too long a Pause, under which the *Spirit* would soon faint and grow languid.

THIS is all I am allowed to discover about the Progress of the *Spirit*, with Relation to that Part, which is born by the *Assembly*; but in the Methods of the Preacher, to which I now proceed, I shall be more large and particular.

S E C T. II.

YOU will read it very gravely remarked in the Books of those illustrious and right eloquent Penmen, the Modern Travellers; that the fundamental Difference in Point of Religion, between the wild *Indians* and Us, lies in this; that we worship *God*, and they worship the *Devil*. But there are certain Criticks, who will by no means admit of this Distinction; rather believing, that all Nations whatsoever adore the *true God*, because they seem to intend their Devotions to some invisible Power, of greatest *Goodness* and *Ability* to help them, which perhaps will take in the brightest Attributes ascribed to the Divinity. Others, again, inform us; that those Idolaters adore two *Principles*; the *Principle* of *Good*, and that of *Evil*: Which, indeed, I am apt to look upon as the most universal Notion, that Mankind, by the mere Light of Nature, ever entertained of Things invisible. How this Idea hath been managed by the *Indians* and Us, and with what Advantage to the Understandings of either, may well deserve to be examined. To me the Difference appeareth little more than this, That they are put oftener upon their Knees by their *Fears*, and We by our *Desires*; that the former set them a *Praying*, and Us a *Cursing*.

a *Curſing*. What I applaud them for is their Diſcretion in limiting Devotions and their Deities to their ſeveral Diſtricts, not ever ſuffering the Liturgy of the *White* God to croſs or interfere with that of the *Black*. Not ſo with Us, who pretending by the Lines and Measures of our Reason, to extend the Dominion of one inviſible Power, and contract that of the other, have diſcovered a groſs Ignorance in the Natures of Good and Evil, and moſt horribly confounded the Frontiers of both. After-Men have liſted up the Throne of their Divinity to the *Cælum Empyræum*, adorned with all ſuch Qualities and Accompliſhments as themſelves ſeem moſt to value and poſſeſs; after they have ſunk their *Principle* of Evil to the loweſt Center, bound him with Chains, loaded him with Curſes, furniſhed him with viler Diſpoſitions than any *Rakehell* of the Town, accoutred him with Tail, and Horns, and huge Claws, and Saucer Eyes; I laugh aloud, to ſee theſe Reaſoners, at the ſame Time, engaged in wiſe Diſpute, about certain Walks and Purlicus, whether they are in the Verge of God or the Devil, ſeriously debating, whether ſuch and ſuch Influences come into Mens Minds, from above or below; whether certain Paſſions and Affections are guided by the Evil Spirit or the Good.

*Dum fas atque nefas exiguo ſine libidinum
Discernunt avidi-----*

Thus do Men eſtabliſh a Fellowship of *Chriſt* with *Belial*, and ſuch is the Analogy they make between *clowen Tongues* and *clowen Feet*. Of the like Nature is the Diſquiſition before us; it hath continued theſe hundred Years an even Debate, whether the Deportment and the Cant of our *Engliſh* Enthuſiaſtic Preachers were *Poſſeſſion* or *Inſpiration*, and a World of Argument hath been drained on either Side, perhaps, to little Purpoſe. For, I think, it is in *Life* as in *Tragedy*, where it is held a Conviction of great Deſect, both in Order and Invention, to interpoſe the Aſſiſtance of preternatural Power with-

out

out an absolute and last Necessity. However, it is a Sketch of human Vanity, for every Individual to imagine the whole Universe is interested in his meanest Concern. If he hath got cleanly over a Kennel, some Angel, unseen, descended on purpose to help him by the Hand; if he hath knocked his Head against a Post, it was the Devil, for his Sins, let loose from Hell, on purpose to buffet him. Who, that sees a little poultry Mortal droning and dreaming, and drivelling to a Multitude, can think it agreeable to common good Sense, that either Heaven or Hell should be put to the Trouble of Influence or Inspection upon what he is about? Therefore, I am resolved immediately to weed this Error out of Mankind, by making it clear, that this Mystery of vending spiritual Gifts, is nothing but a *Trade*, acquired by as much Instruction, and mastered by equal Practice and Application as others are. This will best appear, by describing and deducing the whole Process of the Operation, as variously as it hath fallen under my Knowledge or Experience.

Here the whole Scheme of spiritual Mechanism was deduced and explained, with an Appearance of great Reading and Observation; but it was thought neither safe nor convenient to Print it.

HERE it may not be amiss to add a few Words upon the laudable Practice of wearing *quilted Caps*; which is not a Matter of meer Custom, Humour, or Fashion, as some would pretend, but an Institution of great Sagacity and Use; these, when moistened with Sweat, stop all Perspiration, and, by reverberating the Heat, prevent the Spirit from evaporating any way but at the Mouth; even as a skilful Housewife, that covers her Still with a wet Clout

Clout for the same Reason, and finds the same Effect. For it is the Opinion of choice *Virtuosi*, that the Brain is only a Crowd of little Animals, but with Teeth and Claws extreamly sharp, and, therefore, cling together in the Contexture we behold, like the Picture of *Hobbes's Leviathan*, or like Bees in perpendicular Swarm upon a Tree, or like a Carrion corrupted into Vermin, still preserving the Shape and Figure of the Mother Animal. That all Invention is formed by the Morsure of two or more of these Animals upon certain capillary Nerves, which proceed from thence, whereof three Branches spread into the Tongue, and two into the right Hand. They hold also, that these Animals are of a Constitution extreamly cold; that their Food is the Air we attract, their Excrement Phlegm; and that what we vulgarly call Rheum, and Colds, and Distillations, is nothing else but an epidemical Looseness, to which that little Commonwealth is very subject, from the Climate it lies under. Farther, that nothing less than a violent Heat can disentangle these Creatures from their hamated Station of Life, or give them Vigour and Humour to imprint the Marks of their little Teeth. That if the Morsure be Hexagonal, it produceth Poetry; the Circular giveth Eloquence; if the Bite hath been Conical, the Person, whose Nerve is so affected, shall be disposed to write upon Politicks; and so of the rest.

I SHALL now discourse briefly, by what kind of Practices the Voice is best governed, towards the Composition and Improvement of the *Spirit*; for, without a competent Skill in tuning and toning each Word, and Syllable, and Letter, to their due Cadence, the whole Operation is incompleat, misseth entirely of its Effect on the Hearers, and puts the Workman himself to continual Pains for new Supplies without Success. For it is to be understood, that, in the Language of the Spirit, *Cant* and *Drone-*

ing

ing supply the Place of *Sense* and *Reason*, in the Language of Men: Because, in Spiritual Harangues, the Disposition of the Words, according to the Art of Grammar, hath not the least Use, but the Skill and Influence wholly lye in the Choice and Cadence of the Syllables; even as a discreet *Composer*, who, in setting a Song, changes the Words and Order so often, that he is forced to make it *Nonsense*, before he can make it *Musick*. For this Reason, it hath been held by some, that the Art of Canting is ever in greatest Perfection when managed by *Ignorance*: Which is thought to be enigmatically meant by *Plutarch*, when he telleth us, that the best musical Instruments were made from the Bones of an *Ass*. And the profounder Criticks upon that Passage are of Opinion the Word, in its genuine Signification, meaneth no other than a *Jaw-bone*; although some rather think it to have been the *Os sacrum*: But, in so nice a Case, I shall not take upon me to decide: The Curious are at Liberty to pick from it whatever they please.

THE first Ingredient towards the Art of Canting is a competent Share of *inward Light*; that is to say, a large Memory, plentifully fraught with Theological Poly syllables and mysterious Texts from Holy Writ, applied and digested by those Methods and mechanical Operations already related; the Bearers of this *Light* resembling *Lanthorns*, compact of Leaves from old *Geneva Bibles*; which Invention Sir *Humphry Edw-n*, during his Mayoralty, of happy Memory, highly approved and advanced; affirming the Scripture to be now fulfilled, where it says, *Thy Word is a Lanthorn to my Feet, and a Light to my Paths*.

Now the Art of *Canting* consisteth in skilfully adapting the Voice to whatever Words the Spirit delivers, that each may strike the Ears of the Audience with its most significant Cadence. The Force or Energy of this Eloquence is not to be found, as among an-
tient

tient Orators, in the Disposition of Words to a Sentence, or the turning of long Periods ; but, agreeable to the modern Refinements in Musick, is taken up wholly in dwelling and dilating upon Syllables and Letters. Thus it is frequent for a single *Vowel* to draw Sighs from a Multitude ; and for a whole Assembly of Saints to sob to the Musick of one solitary *Liquid*. But these are Trifles ; when even Sounds inarticulate are observed to produce as forcible Effects. A Master Workman shall *blow his Nose so powerfully*, as to pierce the Hearts of his People, who are disposed to receive the *Excrements* of his Brain with the same Reverence as the *Issue* of it. Hawking, Spitting, and Belching, the Defects of other Mens Rhetorick, are the Flowers, and Figures, and Ornaments of his. For the *Spirit*, being the same in all, it is of no Import through what Vehicle it is conveyed.

It is a Point of too much Difficulty to draw the Principles of this famous Art within the Compass of certain adequate Rules. However, perhaps, I may one Day oblige the World with my Critical Essay upon the Art of *Canting, Philosophically, Physically, and Musically considered*.

BUT, among all Improvements of the *Spirit*, wherein the Voice hath born a Part, there is none to be compared with that of *conveying the Sound through the Nose*, which, under the Denomination of * *Snuffling*, hath passed with so great Applause in the World. The Originals of this Institution are very dark ; but having been initiated into the Mystery of it, and Leave being given me to publish it to the World, I shall deliver as direct a Relation as I can.

THIS

* *The Snuffling of Men, who have lost their Noses by lewd Courses, is said to have given Rise to that Tone, which our Dissenters did too much affect.*

W. Wotton.

THIS Art, like many other famous Inventions, owed its Birth, or, at least, Improvement and Perfection, to an Effect of Chance; but was established upon solid Reasons, and hath flourished in this Island ever since with great Lustre. All agree, that it first appeared upon the Decay and Discouragement of *Bagpipes*, which, having long suffered under the mortal Hatred of the *Brethren*, tottered for a Time, and at last fell with *Monarchy*. The Story is thus related.

As yet, *Snuffing* was not; when the following Adventure happened to a *Banbury Saint*. Upon a certain Day, while he was far engaged among the Tabernacles of the *Wicked*, he felt the outward Man put into odd Commotions, and strangely pricked forward by the Inward; an Effect very usual among the Modern Inspired. For some think, that the *Spirit* is apt to feed on the *Flesh*, like hungry Wines upon raw Beef. Others rather believe, there is a perpetual Game at *Leap-Frog* between both; and sometimes the *Flesh* is uppermost, and sometimes the *Spirit*; adding, that the former, while it is in the State of a *Rider*, wears huge *Rippon* Spurs, and when it comes to the Turn of being *Bearer*, is wonderfully head-strong and hard-mouthed. However it came about, the *Saint* felt his *Vessel* full extended in every Part (a very natural Effect of strong *Inspiration*); and the Place and Time falling out so unluckily, that he could not have the Conveniency of Evacuating upwards, by Repetition, Prayer, or Lecture, he was forced to open an inferior Vent. In short, he wrestled with the *Flesh* so long, that he at length subdued it, coming off with honourable Wounds, all before. The Surgeon had now cured the Parts primarily affected; but the Disease, driven from its Post, flew up into his Head, and, as a skilful General, valiantly attacked in his Trenches, and beaten from the Field, by flying

VOL. XI. R Marches,

Marches, withdraws to the Capital City, breaking down the Bridges to prevent Pursuit ; so the Disease, repelled from its first Station, fled before the *Rod of Hermes*, to the upper Region, there fortifying itself ; but, finding the Foe making Attacks at the *Nose*, broke down the *Bridge*, and retired to the *Head Quarters*. Now the Naturalists observe, that there is in human Noses an *Idiosyncrasy*, by Virtue of which, the more the Passage is obstructed, the more our Speech delights to go through, as the Musick of a Flagelate is made by the *Stops*. By this Method, the Twang of the Nose becomes perfectly to resemble the *Snuffle* of a Bagpipe, and is found to be equally attractive of *British* Ears ; whereof the Saint had sudden Experience, by practising his new Faculty with wonderful Success in the Operation of the *Spirit* : For, in a short Time, no Doctrine passed for Sound and Orthodox, unless it were delivered through the Nose. Strait, every Pastor copied after this Original ; and those, who could not otherwise arrive to a Perfection, spirited by a noble Zeal, made use of the same Experiment to acquire it. So that, I think, it may be truly affirmed, the *Saints* owe their Empire to the *Snuffling* of one *Animal*, as *Darius* did his to the *Neighing* of another ; and both Stratagems were performed by the same Art ; for we read, how the

* *Herodot.* * *Persian Beast* acquired his Faculty, by covering a *Mare* the Day before.

I SHOULD now have done, if I were not convinced, that whatever I have yet advanced upon this Subject is liable to great Exception. For, allowing all I have said to be true, it may still be justly objected, that there is in the Commonwealth of *artificial Enthusiasm* some real Foundation for Art to work upon in the Temper and Complexion of Individuals, which other Mortals seem to want.

Observe

Observe but the Gesture, the Motion, and the Countenance of some choice Professors, though in their most familiar Actions you will find them of a different Race from the rest of human Creatures. Remark your commonest Pretender to a Light *within*, how dark, and dirty, and gloomy he is *without*; as Lanthorns, which, the more Light they bear in their Bodies, cast out so much the more Soot, and Smoak, and fuliginous Matter to adhere to the Sides. Listen but to their ordinary Talk, and look on the Mouth that delivers it, you will imagine you are hearing some antient Oracle, and your Understanding will be *equally* informed. Upon these, and the like Reasons, certain Objectors pretend to put it beyond all Doubt, that there must be a Sort of preternatural *Spirit*, possessing the Heads of the Modern Saints: And some will have it to be the *Heat* of Zeal, working upon the *Dregs* of Ignorance, as other *Spirits* are produced from *Lees* by the Force of Fire. Some again think, that when our earthly Tabernacles are disordered and desolate, shaken and out of Repair, the *Spirit* delights to dwell within them, as Houses are said to be haunted, when they are forsaken and gone to decay.

To set this Matter in as fair a Light as possible, I shall here, very briefly, deduce the History of *Fanaticism*, from the most early Ages to the present. And if we are able to fix upon any one material or fundamental Point, wherein the chief Professors have universally agreed, I think we may reasonably lay hold on That, and assign it for the great Seed or Principle of the *Spirit*.

THE most early Traces we meet with of *Fanatics* in antient Story are among the *Ægyptians*, who instituted those Rites known in *Greece* by the Names of *Orgya*, *Panegyres*, or *Dionysia*, whether introduced

introduced there by *Orpheus* and *Melampus*, we shall not dispute at present, nor, in all Likelihood, at any Time for the future. These Feasts

Diod. Sic. were celebrated to the Honour of *L. 1. Plut. Osiris*, whom the *Grecians* called *Diod. Iside & nyfius*, and is the same with *Bacchus: Osiride.* Which hath betrayed some superficial

Readers to imagine, that the whole Business was nothing more than a Set of roaring, scouring Companions, overcharged with Wine; but this is a scandalous Mistake foisted on the World by a Sort of Modern Authors, who have too *literal* an Understanding; and, because Antiquity is to be traced *backwards*, do therefore, like *Jews*, begin their Books at the wrong End, as if Learning were a Sort of *Conjuring*. These are the Men, who pretend to understand a Book, by scouting through the *Index*, as if a Traveller should go about to describe a *Palace*, when he had seen nothing but the *Privy*; or like certain Fortune-tellers in *Northern America*, who have a Way of reading a Man's Destiny, by peeping in his *Breech*. For, at the Time

* *Herod. l. 2.* of instituting these Mysteries, * there was not one Vine in all *Egypt*, the Natives drinking nothing but *Ale*; which Liquor seemeth to have been far more antient than Wine, and has the Honour of owing its Invention and Progress, not only to the † *Egyptian*

† *Diod. Sic. Osiris*, but to the *Grecian Bacchus*, who, *l. 1. & 3.* in their famous Expedition, carried the Receipt of it along with them, and gave it to the Nations they visited or subdued. Besides, *Bacchus* himself was very seldom, or never drunk; for it was recorded of him,

† *Id. l. 4.* that he was the first † Inventor of the *Mitre*, which he wore continually on his Head (as the whole Company of *Bacchanals* did) to prevent Vapours and the Head-ach after hard Drinking. And for this Reason (say some) the

Scarlet

Scarlet Whore, when she makes the Kings of the Earth drunk with her Cup of Abomination, is always sober herself, though she never baulks the Glass in her Turn, being, it seems, kept upon her Legs by the Virtue of her *Triple Mitre*. Now these Feasts were instituted in Imitation of the famous Expedition *Osiris* made through the World, and of the Company that attended him, where-
of the *Bacchanalian* Ceremonies were *See the Particulars in*
so many Types and Symbols. From *Diod. Sic.*
which Account it is manifest, that the Fanatick Rites of these *Bacchanals* 1. 1. & 3.
cannot be imputed to Intoxications by
Wine, but must needs have had a deeper Foundation. What this was, we may gather large Hints from certain Circumstances in the Course of their Mysteries. For, in the first Place, there was in their Processions an entire *Mixture and Confusion of Sexes*; they affected to ramble about Hills and Desarts: Their Garlands were of *Ivy* and *Vine*, Emblems of Cleaving and Clinging; or of *Fir*, the Parent of *Turpentine*. It is added, that they imitated *Satyrs*, were attended by Goats, and rode upon *Asses*, all Companies of great Skill and Practice in Affairs of Gallantry. They bore for their Ensigns certain curious Figures, perched upon long Poles, made into the Shape and Size of the *Virga genitalis*, with its *Appurtenances*, which were so many Shadows and Emblems of the whole Mystery, as well as Trophies set up by the Female Conquerors. Lastly, in a certain Town of *Attica*, the whole Solemnity, * stripped of all its Types, was * *Dionysia Brauronia*.
performed in *puris naturalibus*, the Votaries, not flying in Coveys, but sorted into Couples. The same may be farther conjectured from the Death of *Orpheus*, one of the Institutors of these Mysteries, who was torn in Pieces by

Women, because he refused † to
 † *Vide Photi-* communicate his Orgyes to them; which
um in ex- others explained, by telling us, he had
cerptis e Co- castrated himself upon Grief, for the
none. Loss of his Wife.

OMITTING many others of less Note, the next *Fanaticks* we meet with, of any Eminence, were the numerous Sects of *Hereticks*, appearing in the five first Centuries of the Christian *Æra*, from *Simon Magus* and his Followers, to those of *Eutychus*. I have collected their Systems from infinite Reading, and comparing them with those of their Successors in the several Ages since, I find there are certain Bounds set even to the Irregularities of Human Thought, and those a great deal narrower than is commonly apprehended. For, as they all frequently interfere, even in their wildest Ravings, so there is one fundamental Point, wherein they are sure to meet, as Lines in a Center, and that is the *Community of Women*: Great were their Sollicitudes in this Matter, and they never failed of certain Articles in their Schemes of Worship, on purpose to establish it.

THE last *Fanaticks* of Note were those which started up in *Germany*, a little after the *Reformation* of *Luther*, springing, as *Mushrooms* do, at the End of a Harvest; such were *John* of *Leyden*, *David George*, *Adam Neuster*, and many others, whose Visions and Revelations always terminated in leading about half a Dozen Sisters, apiece, and making that Practice a fundamental Part of their System. For, human Life is a continual Navigation, and, if we expect our *Vessels* to pass with Safety through the Waves and Tempests of this fluctuating World, it is necessary to make a good Provision of the *Flesh*, as Seamen lay in Store of *Beef* for a long Voyage.

Now

Now from this brief Survey of some principal Sects among the *Fanaticks* in all Ages (having omitted the *Mahometans* and others, who might also help to confirm the Argument I am about) to which I might add several among ourselves, such as the *Family of Love*, *Sweet Singers of Israel*, and the like ; and, from reflecting upon that fundamental Point in their Doctrines, about *Women*, wherein they have so unanimously agreed, I am apt to imagine, that the Seed or Principle which has ever put Men upon *Visions* in things *Invisible*, is of a Corporeal Nature : For the profounder Chemists inform us, that the strongest *Spirits* may be extracted from *Human Flesh*. Besides, the Spinal Marrow, being nothing else but a Continuation of the Brain, must needs create a very free Communication between the Superior Faculties and those below : And thus the *Thorn in the Flesh* serves for a *Spur* to the *Spirit*. I think it is agreed among Physicians, that nothing affects the Head so much as a tentiginous Humour, repelled and elated to the upper Region, found by daily Practice to run frequently up into Madness. A very eminent Member of the Faculty assured me, that when the *Quakers* first appeared, he seldom was without some Female Patients among them for the *furor*-----Persons of a visionary Devotion, either Men or Women, are, in their Complexion, of all others, the most amorous : For Zeal is frequently kindled from the same Spark with other Fires, and, from inflaming Brotherly Love, will proceed to raise that of a Gallant. If we inspect into the usual Progress of modern Courtship, we shall find it to consist in a devout Turn of the Eyes, called *Ogling* ; an artificial Form of Canting and Whining by Rote, every Interval, for Want of other Matter, made up with a Shrug or a Hum, a Sigh or a Groan ; the Style compact of insignificant Words, Incoherences and Repetitions. These I take to be the most accomplished Rules of Address
to

to a Mistress ; and where are these performed with more Dexterity than by the *Saints* ? Nay, to bring this Argument yet closer, I have been informed by certain sanguine Brethren of the first Class, that in the Height and *Orgasmus* of their Spiritual Exercise it has been frequent with them † † † † † ; immediately after which, they found the *Spirit* to relax and flag of a sudden with the Nerves, and they were forced to hasten to a Conclusion. This may be farther strengthened, by observing, with Wonder, how unaccountably all Females are attracted by visionary or enthusiastick Preachers, although never so contemptible in their *out-ward Mein* ; which is usually supposed to be done upon Considerations purely spiritual, without any carnal Regards at all. But I have Reason to think, the *Sex* hath certain Characteristicks, by which they form a truer Judgment of human Abilities and Performings, than we ourselves can possibly do of each other. Let that be as it will, thus much is certain, that however spiritual Intrigues begin, they generally conclude like all others ; they may branch upwards towards Heaven, but the Root is in the Earth. Too intense a Contemplation is not the Business of Flesh and Blood ; it must, by the necessary Course of Things, in a little Time let go its Hold, and fall into *Matter*. Lovers, for the Sake of Celestial converse, are but another Sort of *Platonicks*, who pretend to see Stars and Heaven in Ladies Eyes, and to look or think no lower, but the same *Pit* is provided for both : And they seem a perfect Moral to the Story of that Philosopher, who, while his Thoughts and Eyes were fixed upon the *Constellations*, found himself seduced by his *lower Parts* into a *Ditch*.

I HAD

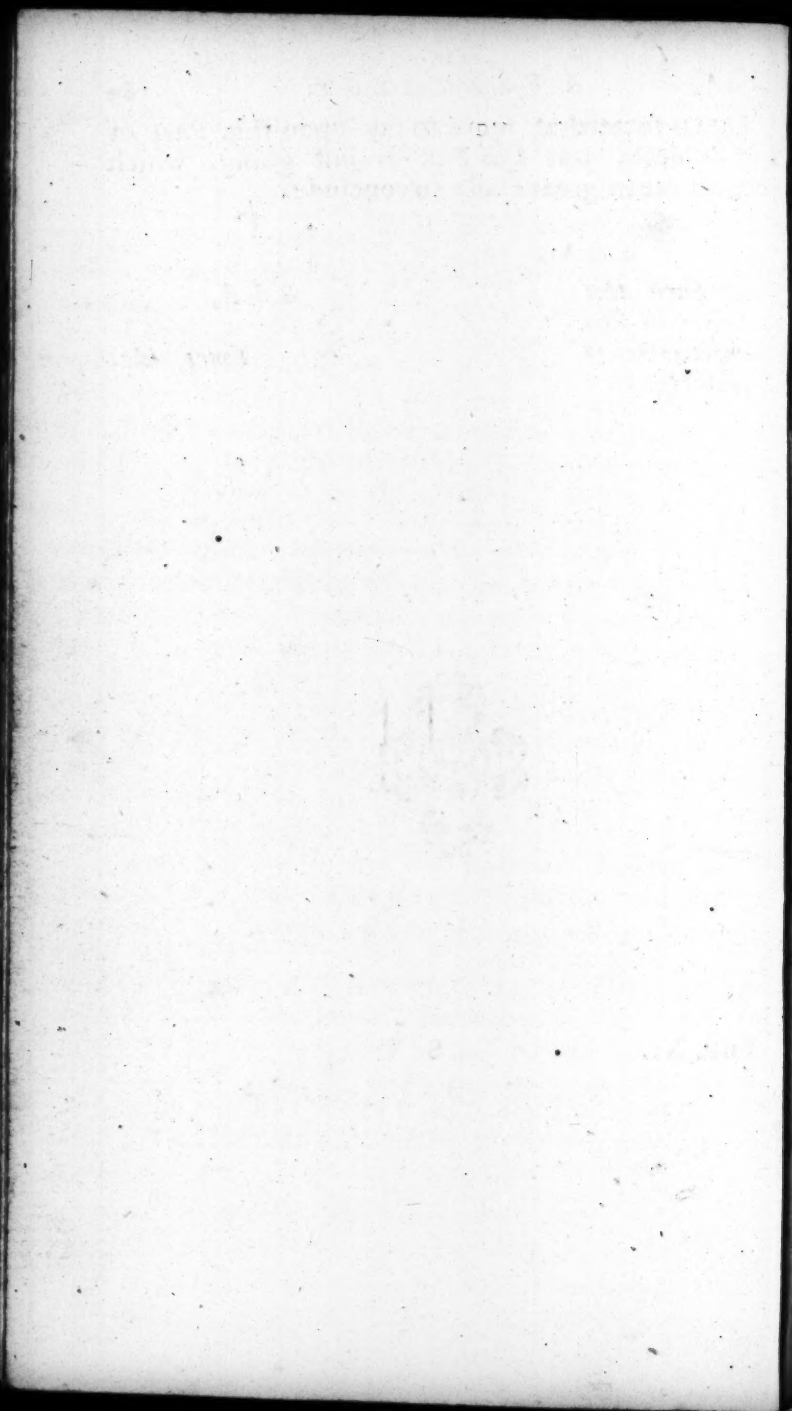
I HAD somewhat more to say upon this Part of the Subject; but the Post is just going, which forceth me in great Haste to conclude.

*Pray burn this
Letter as soon
as it comes to
your Hands.*

S I R,

Yours, &c.





THE
L I F E

Of the REVEREND

JONATHAN SWIFT, D. D.

Dean of St. *Patrick's, Dublin.*

*Hated by Fools, and Fools to hate,
Be that my Motto, and my Fate.*

Printed in the YEAR, 1762.

S 2

This Account of the Life of Dr. SWIFT,
hath, for the most Part, been compiled
from the Authors mentioned therein by
the ingenious Dr. HAWKESWORTH; but,
some of the Writers being mistaken in
particular Facts, they are now set right in
different Places in the Text, as well as
by historical and explanatory Notes.

be
Th
oth
fie
dit
Se
ari
we
alt
po
Le

AN
ACCOUNT
OF THE
LIFE, &c.

TO gratify that Curiosity, which great Eminence always exciteth, many Accounts have been published of the LIFE of *Dr. Jonathan Swift*. These have mutually reflected Light upon each other; ascertained controverted Facts, and rectified Mistakes, which, if they had still been traditional and oral, would still have been believed. Several little Incidents, which shewed the Peculiarities of his Conversation and Domestic Life, were related by *Mrs. Pilkington* in her Memoirs; although, these could be believed only in Proportion as they verified themselves. *Lord Orrery's* Letters contained many of the principal Events,
S 3 inter-

intermingled with many Characteristic Incidents, supported in general upon better Authority; but, sometimes, founded upon wrong Information. Some of these Mistakes were set right by a Volume of Letters signed J. R. * in which were also some new Materials; and, the Account since published by Mr. *Swift*, with an imperfect Sketch by the Dean himself, hath furnished yet more. From a Comparison of all these with each other this Account is compiled.——It is not thought necessary to relate every trifling Particular that hath been recorded, but only to select such as will sufficiently distinguish the Peculiarities of his Character and Manners, and transmit a Knowledge of him to Posterity; of the same Kind, if not in the same Degree, as was obtained by those among his Contemporaries, who were admitted to his Conversation and Friendship.

FOR the History of his Works the Reader is referred to them, and to the Notes and Remarks that are now added.

DOCTOR *Jonathan Swift* was descended from a younger Branch of an antient Family of that Name in *Yorkshire*. *Bernan Swift*, Esq; who in the Reign of King *James the First*, possessed the paternal Estate, was, on the 20th of *March*, 1627, by King *Charles the First*, created a Peer of *Ireland*, with the Title of Viscount *Carlingsford*; although, it

* *These Letters are entitled, Observations on Lord Orrery's Remarks on the Life and Writings of Doctor Jonathan Swift; containing, several singular Anecdotes relative to the Character and Conduct of that great Genius, and the most deservedly celebrated Stella in a Series of Letters to his Lordship. Wrote by the Rev. Dr. Delany Dean of Downe.*

is said he never went into that Kingdom. He died without Male Issue, and the Family Inheritance descended to his Daughters, one of whom married *Robert Fielding*, Esq; commonly called, *Handsome Fielding*, and the other the Earl of *Eglington*. *Fielding* soon dissipated his Wife's Patrimony; and, that of her Sister being transferred to the Family of Lord *Eglington*, the principal Estate of the *Swifts* was divided from the Name for ever. One of the younger Branches from the same Stem, was Sir *Edward Swift*, who distinguished himself by his Attachment to the Royal Cause, in the great Rebellion of 1641, from whom there is no Descendant of the Name.

ANOTHER of the younger Branches was the Reverend *Thomas Swift*, Vicar of *Goodrich*, in *Hertfordshire*, with which he also held another Ecclesiastical Living.

HIS Father *William Swift*, Rector of *St. Andrew's* in *Canterbury*, married the Heiress of *Philpot*, who contrived to keep her Estate, which was very considerable, in her own Hands: She is said to have been extremely capricious and ill-natured, and to have disinherited her Son *Thomas*, an only Child, merely for robbing an Orchard when he was a Boy; but however this be, it is certain, that except a Church or Chapter Lease which was not renewed, *Thomas* never possessed more than one hundred Pounds a Year: This little Estate, which lay at *Goodrich*, he mortgaged for three hundred Broad Pieces, and having quilted them into his Waistcoat, he set out for *Ragland Castle*, whither his Majesty King *Charles the First* had retired after the Battle of *Naseby*. The Governor, who knew him well, asked, what was his Errand? 'I come, said *Swift*, 'to give his Majesty my Coat,' at the same Time pulling it off and presenting it: The Governor told

told him pleasantly, that his Coat was worth little; 'why then, said *Swift*, take my Waistcoat.' This was soon found to be a useful Garment by its Weight; and it is remarked by Lord *Clarendon*, * that the King received no Supply more seasonable or more acceptable than these three hundred Broad Pieces during the whole War, his Distress being then very great, and his Resources cut off. The Zeal and Activity of this Gentleman for the Royal Cause, exposed him to much Danger and many Sufferings; he was plundered more than thirty Times by the Parliament's Army; he was ejected from his Church Livings, his Estate was sequestered, and he was himself thrown into Prison. His Estate, however, was afterwards recovered, and Part of it sold to pay the Money due on the Mortgage, and some other Debts; the Remainder, being about one Half, descended to his Heir, and is now possessed by his Great Grandson, *Deane Swift*, Esq; †

THIS Mr. *Thomas Swift* married Mrs. *Elizabeth Dryden*, of an antient Family in *Huntingdonshire*, Sister to the Father of *John Dryden* the Poet, by whom he had ten Sons and four Daughters; of the Sons six survived him, *Godwin*, *Thomas*, *Dryden*, *William*, *Jonathan*, and *Adam*.

Thomas was bred at *Oxford*, and took Orders; he married the eldest Daughter of Sir *William D'Avenant*, but died young, and left only one Son, whose Name also was *Thomas*, ‡ and who died in 1752, Rector of *Puttenham* in *Surry*, a Benefice which he had possessed threescore Years.

* Sketch. † The Grandmother of this Gentleman, one of the Wives of GODWIN SWIFT, was Heiress to Admiral DEANE, which became a Christian Name in the Family. ‡ Sketch and Note.

Godwin

Godwin was a Barrister of *Gray's-Inn*, and *William*, *Dryden*, *Jonathan*, and *Adam* were Attornies.

Godwin having married a Relation of the old Marchioness of *Ormond*, the old Duke of *Ormond* made him his Attorney-General in the Palatinate of *Tipperary*, in *Ireland*, which was at this Time almost without Lawyers, the Rebellion having made almost every Man of whatsoever Condition, a Soldier. *Godwin* therefore determined to attempt the Acquisition of a Fortune in that Kingdom, and the same Motives induced his four Brothers to go with him. *Godwin* soon became wealthy, and the rest obtained something more than a genteel Competence, although *Dryden* and *Jonathan*, who died soon after their Arrival, had little to bequeath.

Jonathan at the Age of about three and twenty, and before he went to *Ireland*, married Mrs. *Abigail Erick* of *Leicestershire*; the Family of this Lady was descended from *Eric* the Forester, who raised an Army to oppose *William the Conqueror*, by whom he was vanquished, and afterwards made Commander of his Forces: But, whatever was the Honour of her Lineage, her Fortune was small, and about two Years after her Marriage, she was left a Widow with one Child, a Daughter, and pregnant with another, having no Means of Subsistence but an Annuity of twenty Pounds, which her Husband had purchased for her in *England* immediately after his Marriage.

In this Distress she was taken with her Daughter into the Family of *Godwin*, her Husband's eldest Brother, and on the 30th of *November*, 1667, about seven Months after her Husband's Death, she was delivered of a Son, whom she called *Jonathan*, in Remembrance of his Father, and who

who was afterwards the celebrated Dean of St. Patrick's, Dublin.

OF all the Brothers of Mrs. *Swift's* Husband, *Godwin* only had Sons; and by these Sons she was subsisted in her Old Age, as she had been before by their Father and their Uncles, with such Liberality, that she declared herself not only Happy but Rich.

It happened, by whatever Accident, that *Jonathan* was not suckled by his Mother, but by a Nurse who was a Native of *Whitehaven*; and when he was about a Year old, her Affection for him was become so strong, that finding it necessary to visit a Relation who was dangerously sick, and from whom she expected a Legacy, she found Means to convey the Child on Shipboard, without the Knowledge of his Mother or his Uncle, and carried him with her to *Whitehaven*. At this Place he continued near three Years; for when the Matter was discovered, his Mother sent Orders not to hazard a second Voyage until he should be better able to bear it. The Nurse, however, gave other Testimonies of her Affection to *Jonathan*, for during his Stay at *Whitehaven* she taught him to spell, and when he was five Years old, he was able to read any Chapter in the Bible.

Mrs. *Swift* about two Years after her Husband's Death, quitted the Family of Mr. *Godwin Swift*, in *Ireland*, and retired to *Leicester*, the Place of her Nativity; but her Son was again carried to *Ireland* by his Nurse, and replaced under the Protection of his Uncle *Godwin*.

It has been generally believed that *Swift* was born in *England*, a Mistake to which many Incidents besides this, have contributed; he had been frequently heard to say, when the People of *Ireland* displeased him, 'I am not of this vile Coun-

' try,

'try, I am an *Englishman*.' Mr. Pope also, in one of his Letters to him, mentions *England* as his native Country; but this Account of his Birth is taken from that which he left behind him in his own Hand-writing; and, while he lived, he was so far from seriously denying or concealing his being a Native of *Ireland*, that he often mentioned and even pointed out the * House in which he was born.

HE hath also been thought by some to have been a natural Son of Sir *William Temple*, a Mistake which was probably founded upon another; for, until the Publication of his Letter to Lord † *Palmerston*, among his posthumous Works, he was thought to have received such Favours from Sir *William*, as he could not be supposed to bestow upon a Person to whom he was not related; however, such a Relation between Sir *William* and the *Dean*, appears beyond Contradiction to have been impossible; for, Sir *William Temple* was Resident abroad in a public Character from the Year 1665 to 1670, as may be proved by his Letters to the Earl of *Arlington* and the rest of the Ministry. *Swift* was born in *November 30, 1667*, § and his Mother was never out of the *British Dominions*.

AT † about the Age of six Years, he was sent to the School of *Kilkenny*, and having continued there eight Years, he was at the Age of fourteen admitted into the University of *Dublin*, || and became a Student in *Trinity-College*. There he lived in perfect Regularity, and obeyed the Statutes with the utmost Exactness; but, he was so much §§ depressed by the Disadvantages of his Situation, deriving

* HOEY'S Court near St. WERBURGH'S Church, Dublin. † See Vol. 8. p. 98. § ORRERY, p. 5. ‡ 1673. || 1681. §§ Sketch.

deriving his present Subsistence merely from the precarious Bounty of an Uncle, and having no other Object of Hope, but the Continuance of it, that he could not resist the Temptation to neglect many necessary Objects of Academic Study, to which he was not by Nature much inclined, and apply himself wholly to Books of History and Poetry, by which he could, without intellectual Labour, fill his Mind with pleasing Images, and for a while suspend the Sense of his Condition. The Sacrifice of the future to the present, whether it be a Folly or a Fault, is seldom unpunished; and, *Swift* even found himself in the Situation of a Man who had burned his Bed to warm his Hands, for at the End of four Years he was refused his Degree of Batchelor of Arts for Insufficiency*, and was at last admitted *Speciali Gratia*, which is there considered as the highest Degree of Reproach and Dishonour.

But, upon *Swift*, this Punishment was not ineffectual, he dreaded the Repetition of such Disgrace as the last Evil that could befall him, and therefore immediately set about to prevent it, as the principal Business of his Life. During seven Years, from that Time†, he studied eight Hours a Day; and, by such an Effort of such a Mind so long continued, great Knowledge must necessarily have been acquired. He commenced these Studies at the University in *Dublin*‡, where he continued them three Years, and, during this Time, he also drew the first Sketch of his *Tale of a Tub* §.

In the Year 1688, when he was about twenty-one, and had been seven Years at College, his Uncle

* 1685. † I. R. 50. ‡ 1688.

§ WASSENDRA WARREN, Esq; a Gentleman of Fortune near Belfast, in the North of Ireland, who was Chamber-fellow with Dr. SWIFT, declared that he then saw a Copy of the *Tale of a Tub* in SWIFT's own Hand-writing. Dean Swift. p. 31.

Uncle *Godwin*, was seized with a Lethargy, and soon after totally deprived both of his Speech and his Memory : As by this Accident, *Swift* was left without Support, he took a Journey to *Leicester*, that he might consult with his Mother what Course of Life to pursue. At this Time Sir *William Temple* was in high Reputation, and honoured with the Confidence and Familiarity of King *William**. His Father, Sir *John Temple*, had been Master of the Rolls in *Ireland*, and contracted an intimate Friendship with *Godwin Swift*, which continued until his Death ; and Sir *William*, who inherited his Title and Estate, had married a Lady to whom Mrs. *Swift* was related ; she therefore advised her Son to communicate his Situation to Sir *William*, and solicit his Direction what to do ; this Advice, which perhaps only confirmed a Resolution that *Swift* had secretly taken before he left *Ireland*, he immediately resolved to pursue.

SIR *William* received him with great Kindness, and *Swift's* first Visit continued about two Years†. Sir *William* had been Ambassador and Mediator of a general Peace at *Nimeguen* before the Revolution ; in this Character he became known to the Prince of *Orange*, who frequently visited him at *Sheen* in *Surry*, after his Arrival in *England*, and took his Advice in Affairs of the utmost Importance. Sir *William* being then lame with the Gout, *Swift* used to attend his Majesty in his Walks about the Garden, who admitted him to such Familiarity, that he shewed him how to cut Asparagus after the *Dutch* Manner, and once offered to make him a Captain of Horse‡. *Swift* appears to have fixed his Mind upon an Ecclesiastical Life ; and, upon declining this Offer, he obtained a Promise of Pre-

T

ferment

* D. S. p. 33, 34. † 1690. ‡ D. S. 108.

ferment in the Church; for, in a Letter to his Uncle *William*, dated 1692, he says, 'I am not to take Orders until the King gives me a Prebend.*'

SIR *William* becoming still more infirm, and wishing to retire farther from *London*, bought an Estate at *Farnham* in *Surry*, called *Moorpark*, whither he was accompanied by *Swift*†. About this Time a Bill was brought into the House for Triennial Parliaments‡, against which the King, who was a Stranger to our Constitution, was very averse, by the Advice of some weak People, who persuaded the Earl of *Portland*, that *Charles* the First lost his Crown and Life by consenting to such a Bill. Upon this Occasion the Earl was dispatched to *Moorpark* by the King for Sir *William*'s Advice, who said much to shew him the Mistake, but without Effect, and therefore he soon after dispatched *Swift* to *Kensington*, with the whole Account in Writing, to convince the King and the Earl how ill

* D. S. 56.

† There is some Difficulty in reconciling the first and last Paragraphs of Sect. 23, in the Dean's Sketch of his own Life where *Moorpark* is mentioned; in the first it is said, that *Swift*, after having been some Months with his Mother at *Leicester*, was received by Sir *William*, who was now retired to *Moorpark*; and, in the last, that Sir *William*, tired of being near *London*, bought an Estate near *Farnham* in *Surry*, where Mr. *Swift* accompanied him. The Sense of the last, which seems to imply, that *Swift* lived with Sir *William* at *Sheen* before he went to *Moorpark*, is adopted upon the Credit of Mr. *Deane Swift*, who says, that *Swift* was there, familiar with King *William*; and the King does not appear to have continued his Visits after the Removal to *Moorpark*. D. S. 108.

‡ Sketch, Sects 23 and 24 Beginning.

ill they were informed. *Swift*, although he was then very young, was yet well acquainted with the *English* History, and gave the King a compendious Account of the Matter, which he amplified to the Earl; but the Measure was at last rejected, and thus ended *Swift's* first Embassy to Court, so much to his Dissatisfaction, that he then declared it was the first Incident* that helped to cure him of Vanity. Soon after† this Transaction he was seized with the Return of a Disorder which he had contracted in *Ireland* by eating a great Quantity of Fruit, and upon this Occasion returned thither by the Advice of his Physicians, who hoped that his native Air would contribute to the Recovery of his Health; but, from this Journey he received no Benefit, and therefore in a short Time returned to Sir William‡, being ever afterwards subject to that Giddiness, which gradually increased, although with irregular Intermissions, until it terminated in total Debility of Body and Mind.

BUT, he was still indefatigable in his Studies, and to prevent the Loss of Health in the Acquisition of Knowledge, by the want of bodily Exercise, it was his constant Practice to run up an Hill that was near the House and back again every two Hours; the Distance backwards and forwards was about half a Mile, and he used to run it in about six Minutes§. By what Books or Studies

T 2

were

* Sketch, Sect. 24.

† It must have been after, tho' it is first related in the Sketch; for it is said, Sect. 23. that he went to *Ireland* after he had been two Years at Moorpark; and in Sect. 24, that his Expedition to Court was soon after the Removal from Sheen.

‡ Sketch, Sect. 23.

§ D. S. 276.

were principally directed cannot certainly be known, but several copious Extracts from *Cyprian*, *Irenæus*, *Sleidan's Commentaries*, and *Padre Paolo's History of the Council of Trent*, were found among his Papers, which appear by Memorandums in his own Hand-writing*, to have been made while he lived with Sir *William Temple*.

ABOUT a Year after his Return from *Ireland*, he thought it expedient to take his Degree of Master of Arts at *Oxford*; with this View he appears to have written to his Uncle *William Swift*, to procure and send him the Testimonium of his Batchelor's Degree.—With this Testimonium, which is dated the 3d of *May* 1692, he went to *Oxford*, where, having received many Civilities, he was admitted *ad eundem* on the 14th of *June*, and took his Master's Degree on the 5th of *July* following.

It hath been said, that the Civilities which he received at *Oxford*; proceeded from a Misunderstanding of the Phrase *Speciali Gratia*, which was there supposed to be a Compliment paid to uncommon Merit.

BUT these Words are not inserted in that Copy of the Testimonium which is entered in the Congregation Book of *Oxford*†; and not to have inserted them there, when they were thought a Compliment, would have been an Affront; it is therefore probable, that by the Influence of *Swift's* Uncle they were omitted in the Copy which he procured and sent, especially, as some such Favour seems to be intimated in *Swift's* Letter to him after he had received it: ‘ I am still, says he, to thank
‘ you for your Care in my Testimonium, and it
‘ was

* D. S. 276.

† D. S. p. 30, 44. Orrery, p. 2.

* was to very good Purpose*, for I was never more
 ' satisfied than in the Behaviour of the University.
 The Civilities which he received at *Oxford* might
 indeed proceed from his known Connection with
Sir William Temple, but he might reasonably impute
 them also to the Suppression of a Reproach, against
 which there was good Reason to fear this Con-
 nection would not have supported him: Nor is it
 strange that *Swift*, after his Reputation was estab-
 lished, should, while he was sporting with this In-
 cident in the Gaiety of his Heart, pretend a Mis-
 take which never happened, or that what he meant
 as a Jest upon the University, should be seriously
 remembered as an Event of his Life.

It has also been said, that upon his Disgrace at
Dublin, he resolved to pursue his Studies at *Oxford*,
 where he almost constantly resided during three
 Years, and was avowedly supported by *Sir William*
Temple; † but the contrary is incontestably true,
 for there are not quite two Months between the
 Testimonium and his taking his Master's Degree.
 Besides, in the Letter to his Uncle just mentioned,
 he says, ' I am ashamed to be more obliged in a
 ' few Weeks to Strangers, than in seven Years to
 ' *Dublin College*. ‡

T 3

From

* Orrery p. 11. D. S. p. 56.

† Orrery p. 8, 9.

‡ He went to College at the Age of fourteen, in
 1681; continued there seven Years, as appears by his
 Letter, so that he did not leave Ireland until 1688;
 he was some Months with his Mother before he went
 to Sir WILLIAM, and two Years with him before he
 went to Ireland for his Health, which must therefore
 be in 1691; he returned from Ireland, and continued
 some Time longer with Sir WILLIAM before he went to
 Oxford, which must therefore be 1692: and in that

FROM *Oxford* he returned again to *Moorpark*, where he assisted *Sir William Temple* to revise his Works, corrected and improved his *Tale of a Tub*, and added the Digressions. From the Conversation of *Sir William*, who was minutely acquainted with all the Intricacies of Party and the Secrets of State, during the Reigns of *King Charles* and *King James the Second*, *Swift* greatly increased his political Knowledge; but, having long suspected *Sir William* of neglecting to provide for him, merely that he might keep him in his Family, he at length resented it so warmly, that in the Year 1694, a Quarrel ensued, and they parted.

It is probable, that *Swift* did not leave *Sir William* for such a Reason, without severe Expostulation, not only because *Swift* was no Respecter of Persons, but because it appears * that *Sir William*, although he was extremely angry, admitted his Claim to some Provision, by offering to make him his Deputy as Master of the Rolls in *Ireland*; this Offer however *Swift* did not accept, † but replied, that since he had now an Opportunity of living without being driven into the Church for Support, a Scruple which had hitherto kept him out of it, he was determined to go into *Ireland* and take Orders.

SWIFT during his Residence with *Sir William*, had never failed to ‡ visit his Mother at *Leicester* once a Year, and his Manner of travelling was very

very Year he took his Degree. The Fact therefore, which *Lord Orrery* says, was immediately construed to favour an Opinion that SWIFT was *Sir William's* natural Son, appears never to have happened. See SWIFT's Sketch of his own Life.

* D. S. 52. † Sketch, Sect. 25 and Note.
‡ D. S. 99. Orrery 22.

very extraordinary : He always went on foot, except the Weather was very bad, and then he would sometimes take Shelter in a Waggon ; he chose to dine at obscure Alehouses among Pedlars and Hostlers, and to lie where he saw written over the Door, *Lodgings for a Penny* ; but he used to bribe the Maid with a Tester for a single Bed and clean Sheets. In this Manner he went down to his Mother, upon his leaving Sir *William* ; and from *Leicester* he wrote a Letter dated *June, 1694*, to his Cousin *Deane Swift* then at *Lisbon*, in which he relateth his Quarrel with Sir *William*, and declares his Purpose * to take Orders in the *September* following, wishing he could procure for him a Chaplainship of the *Factory*. What was the Effect of this Letter is not known ; but, *Swift* soon after obtained a Recommendation to Lord *Capel*, then Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, who gave him the Prebend of *Kilroot*, in the Diocese of *Connor*, a Northern District, † worth about one hundred Pounds *per Annum* : But, Sir *William*, who had been used to the Conversation of *Swift*, soon found that he could not be content to live without him ; he therefore urged him to resign his Prebend in favour of a Friend, ‡ and promised to obtain Preferment for him in *England* if he would return. § *Swift* consented, and Sir *William* was so much pleased with this Act of Kindness, || that during the Remainder

* D. S. 51.

† Sketch, Sect. 25.

‡ Rev. Mr. WINDOR, his Curate.

§ This appears by a Letter from SWIFT's Sister, then in *Ireland*, to her Cousin DEANE in *Portugal* : Sir WILLIAM TEMPLE, says she, was so fond of him, that he made him give up his Living in this Country, and promised to get him one in *England*. D. S. 66.

|| D. S. 66.

er of his Life, which was about four Years, his Behaviour was such as produced the utmost Harmony between them: *Swift* as a Testimony of his Friendship and Esteem wrote the *Battle of the Books*, of which *Sir William* is the Hero; and, *Sir William* when he died, left him a pecuniary Legacy, and his posthumous Works.

WHAT other Favours he received from *Sir William*, cannot certainly be known. *Swift* acknowledged none but his ineffectual Recommendation to *King William*, and he is known to have received frequent Remittances from his Uncle *William* and his Cousin *Willoughby Swift*; so that *Sir William* does not seem to have treated him with a Liberality for which it is difficult to account.

UPON the Death of *Sir William Temple*, *Swift* applied by Petition to *King William* for the first vacant Prebend of *Canterbury* or *Westminster*, for which the Royal Promise had been obtained by his late Patron, whose posthumous Works he † dedicated to his Majesty, to facilitate the Success of this Application. But, it doth not appear that after the Death of *Sir William* the King took the least Notice of Mr. *Swift*; his Petition and Dedication were equally neglected, and after a fruitless Attendance at Court, which probably encreased the Austerity of his Temper, he accepted an Invitation of the Earl of *Berkeley*, who had been appointed one of the Lords Justices of *Ireland*, to attend him as Chaplain and private Secretary. It might reasonably have been hoped, that although he had been disappointed of the Preferment for which he solicited, yet the Employment to which he was invited, would have been secure; but, it happened, that after he had acted as Secretary during

† See Vol. X. p. 214.

during the whole Journey to *Dublin*, one * *Busb*, found Means to insinuate to Lord *Berkeley*, that the Post of Secretary was not fit for a Clergyman, and his Lordship suffered himself to be so easily convinced of this Impropriety, that after making some Apology to Mr. *Swift*, he appointed *Busb* Secretary in his Stead.

THIS Disappointment was soon after followed by another; it happened that the Deanry of *Derry* became vacant, and it was the Earl of *Berkeley's* Turn to dispose of it; yet, whatever Atonement was due to *Swift*, for his Lordship's late Breach of Engagement, the Secretary having received a Bribe,† the Deanry was given to another, † upon Pretence that *Swift*, who was then more than thirty Years old, was too young, and he received instead of it, the two Livings of *Laracor* and *Rathbeggan*, in the Diocese of *Meath*, which together did not amount to half the Value of the Deanry. †

As *Swift* had refused a Commission under King *William*, and a secular Employment under Sir *William Temple*, it appears that his Attatchment to § a religious Life, however early and however strong, was not the Effect of temporary Views, but of Zeal for the Success of the great Work in which he was about to engage, and a Consciousness of his own Ability to acquit himself with Advantage, ** That religious Purposes were at this Time predominant in his Mind, he used frequently to declare; he hoped, he said, that by diligent and constant

* See the Problem solved. Vol. II. p. 330.

† Dr. BOLTON.

‡ As SWIFT did not receive these Livings till after the Deanry was given to another, his Non-residence could not, as Lord Orrery supposes, be the Reason why it was not given to him.

§ Sketch, Sect. 27.

** J. R. 40, 41.

stant Application he should so far excel, that the Sexton might sometimes be asked on a *Sunday Morning*, "Pray does the Doctor preach To-day? And, when after having taken Possession of his Livings he went to reside at *Laracor*, he gave public Notice that he would read Prayers on every *Wednesday* and *Friday*, a Labour which he would not have brought upon himself, if he had been principally concerned about the Value of his Dues, which had been long before customarily paid for much less Service.

THE Duties of the Church which he thus rendered more frequent, he performed with the utmost Punctuality and the most rational Devotion; he was indeed devout, not only in his publick and solemn Addresses to God, but in that transient Act of Adoration, which is called saying Grace, and which generally consisteth only in a Mutter and a Bow, in which the Speaker seems to compliment the Company, and the Company each other; *Swift* always used the fewest Words that could be uttered on the Occasion, but he pronounced them with an Emphasis and Fervor which every one around him saw and felt, with his Hands clasped in each other and lifted to his Breast; and, it is hoped, that those who can no otherwise emulate the Character of *Swift*, will attempt it in this Act of religious Decorum, and no longer affect either to be Wits or fine Gentlemen, by a Conduct directly contrary to so great an Example.

BUT, *Swift* with all this Piety in his Heart, could not resist the Temptation to indulge the Peculiarity of his Humour when an Opportunity offered, whatever might be the Impropriety of Time and Place.

ON the first *Wednesday* after he had summoned his Congregation to *Laracor*, he ascended his Desk, and

and having sat some Time with no other Auditor than his Clerk *Roger*, he rose up, and with a Composure and Gravity, that upon this Occasion was irresistibly ridiculous, he began, "Dearly beloved *Roger*, the Scripture moveth you and me in "sundry Places," and so proceeded to the End of the Service.

DURING *Swift's* Residence at *Laracor*, he invited a Lady to *Ireland* whom he hath celebrated by the Name of *Stella**. With this Lady he became acquainted while he lived with Sir *William Temple*; she was the Daughter of his Steward, whose Name was *Johnson*, and Sir *William*, when he died, left her One thousand Pounds, in Consideration of her Father's faithful Services†; at the Death of Sir *William* which happened in 1699, she was in the sixteenth Year of her Age‡, and it was about two Years afterwards that at *Swift's* Invitation she left *England*, accompanied by Mrs. *Dingley*, a Lady who was fifteen Years older, and whose whole Fortune §, altho' she was related to Sir *William*, was no more than an Annuity of Twenty-seven Pounds. Whether *Swift* at this Time desired the Company of *Stella* as a Wife or Friend, is not certain, but the Reason which she and her Companion then gave for their leaving *England*, was, that in *Ireland* the Interest of Money was high, and Provisions were cheap.

It appears however, that other Reasons were suspected in the Neighbourhood of *Moorpark*; for Mr. *Thomas Swift*, the Rector of *Puttenham*, in a Letter

* D. S. 86. 90.

† D. S. 85.

‡ Mr. DEANE SWIFT says eighteen, but it appears by the Poem on her Birth-day in 1718, that she was then but thirty-four; the Dean says she was in *Ireland* from eighteen, in his Introduction to *Bons Mots de Stella*, Vol. X. p. 225.

§ D. S. 86.

Letter which he wrote a few Years afterwards, enquires, whether *Jonathan* was married, or whether he had been able to resist the Charms of both those Gentlewomen who marched from *Moorpark* to *Dublin**, with a Resolution to engage him? It appears too that *Swift*, if he did not address her himself, contrived to break off a Treaty of Marriage with another, by persuading her to insist upon the Terms with which the Gentleman could not comply. But whatever was *Swift's* Attachment to Mrs. *Johnson*†, every possible Precaution was taken to prevent Scandal; they never lived in the same House; when *Swift* was absent, Mrs. *Johnson* and her Friend resided at the Parsonage; when he returned, they removed either to the House of Dr. *Raymond*, Vicar of *Trim*‡, a Gentleman of great Hospitality, and *Swift's* intimate Friend, or to a Lodging provided for them in the Neighbourhood; neither were they ever known to meet but in the Presence of a third Person. *Swift* made frequent Excursions to *Dublin* and some to *London*, but Mrs. *Johnson* was buried in Solitude and Obscurity; she was known only to a few of *Swift's* most intimate Acquaintance, and had no female Companion except Mrs. *Dingley*.

IN 1701, *Swift*, took his Doctor's Degree, and in 1702, soon after the Death of King *William*, he went to *England* for the first Time after his Settlement at *Laracor*, a Journey which he frequently repeated during the Reign of Queen *Anne*. Mrs. *Johnson* was once also in *England* in 1705, but returned in a few Months§, and never afterwards crossed the Channel.

He soon became eminent as a Writer, and in that Character, at least, was known to the great Men

* D. S. 86, 87.

† D. S. 89.

‡ D. S. 90.

§ D. S. 90.

Men in both the Factions, which were distinguished by the Names of Whig* and Tory. He had been educated among the Whigs, but he at length attached himself to the Tories, because, as he said, the Whigs had renounced the old Principles and received others which their Forefathers held in utter Abhorrence†; he did not, however, write any particular Pamphlet from the Year 1701, to the Year 1708.

BUT, though by his frequent Excursions to *England*, and a long Absence from his Cures, he appears to have delayed the Execution of his Purpose to excel as a Preacher, yet he used to declare, that he did not renounce it until his Acquaintance with *Harley*‡, nor did he ever mention his subsequent Attachment to Politics without indubitable Signs of Penitence and Regret. It is probable, that he hoped to exert himself more effectually in the Church by acquiring some other Preferment, and that with this View he was solicitous to be near the Court; for, before his Acquaintance with Lord *Oxford* a Bishoprick was intended for him by the Queen, but Archbishop *Sharpe* and a certain great Lady§, having misrepresented his Principles and Character, her Majesty gave it to another||. Of this Injury however the Archbishop was afterwards truly sensible, expressed great Sorrow for it, and desired his Forgiveness.

AFTER this Disappointment it was not long before a new Scene opened before him, for in 1710, being then in *England*, he was impowered by his

U

Grace

* *Orrery* 27. † *D. S.* 148.

‡ *J. R.* 41, 42, 266.

§ *The Dutches of Somerset.* See the Author on himself, Vol. II. page 56.

|| *J. R.* 271.

Grace the Lord *Primate of *Ireland* to solicit the Queen† to exonerate the Clergy of *Ireland* from paying the twentieth Parts and First Fruits, and upon this Occasion his Acquaintance with *Harley* commenced.

As soon as he had received the Bishop's Letters, Instructions, and Authority, he resolved to apply to Mr. *Harley*, not only because he was a principal Person in the Queen's Ministry, but because by his Interest the same Favour had been granted to the Clergy of *England*. That he might not wait upon Mr. *Harley*, to whom his Name was well known, wholly without Recommendation, he got himself represented as a Person who had been extremely ill used by the last Ministry‡, because he would not go certain Lengths which they would have had him, this being in some Sort Mr. *Harley*'s own Case.

Mr. *Harley* received him with the utmost Kindness and Respect; he sat with him two Hours in Company, and two Hours he was with him alone; he not only engaged in the Doctor's immediate Business with the utmost Zeal, and soon after accomplished it, but told him he must bring him acquainted with Mr. *St. John*, invited him to dine with him, charged him to come often, and when the Doctor proposed attending at his Levee, told him, that was no Place for Friends. The Doctor soon after became personally acquainted with the rest of the Ministers, who appear to have courted and caressed him with uncommon Assiduity. He dined every *Saturday* at Mr. *Harley*'s,

* Dr. MARSH, who built and endowed the fine Library of *St Sepulcher's* near *St. Patrick's Cathedral*.

† See Letters Vol. VIII.

‡ See Letter to KING, Vol. VIII.

Harley's, with the Lord Keeper, Mr. Secretary *St. John*, and Lord *Rivers*; on that Day no other Person was for some Time admitted; but, this select Company was at length enlarged to sixteen, all Men of the first Class, *Swift* included*; they dined once a Week at the Houses of each other, by Rotation, and went under the general Denomination of Brothers.

FROM this Time the Doctor supported the Interest of his new Friends with all his Power, in Pamphlets, Poems, and periodical Papers; his Intimacy with them was so remarkable, that he was thought not only to defend, but in some Degree to direct their Measures; and such was his Importance in the Opinion of the opposite Party, that many Speeches† were made against him in both Houses of Parliament; a Reward was also offered for discovering the Author of the *Publick Spirit of the Whigs*||.

WHATEVER Excellence we possess, or whatever Honours we obtain, the Pleasure which they produce is all relative to some particular Favourite with whom we are tenderly connected, either by Friendship or Love; or, at most, it terminates like Rays collected by a Burning-glass, in a very small Circle which is scarce more than a Point, and like Light becometh sensible only by Reflection. Thus *Swift*, while he was courted and caressed by those whom others were making Interest to approach, seems to have enjoyed his Distinction only in Proportion as it was participated with *Stella*; for, amidst all the Business, and all the Honours that crowded upon him, he wrote every Day an Account of whatever occurred, and sent her a Journal

U 2

nal

* D. S. 227, 317. † See Vol. 9. p. 1. and Note.

|| See Vol. V. p. 385.

nal regularly, dated every Fortnight, during the whole Time of his Connection with Queen Anne's Ministry. From these unrestrained Effusions of his Heart many Particulars are known no other Way, and by these it appears incontestably, that he was not only employed, but trusted; and, that *Harley* who is universally allowed to have been one of the most reserved and mysterious of all Politicians, was to him in Affairs of the utmost Moment open and explicit. The Result of one of their Conferences, so early as the Year 1710, was to this Effect, That the Kingdom was as certainly ruined, as a Bankrupt Merchant; that a Peace, whether bad or good was absolutely necessary*; that the Confederacy must soon break, and Factions increase; and that the Ministry was upon too narrow a Bottom, and stood like an Isthmus, between the Whigs on one Side, and the violent Tories on the other, a Situation in which they could not subsist. These violent Tories were formed into a Society, called, *The October Club*†, of whom *Swift* says, "They are about an hundred Parliament Men of the Country, who drink *October Beer* at Home, and meet every Evening at a Tavern near the Parliament House‡, to drive on to Extremes against the Whigs, to call the old Ministry to Account, and get off five or six Heads."

BUT *Swift* thought this Party too precipitant, it is certain he thought Lord *Oxford* too slow; and he once told him so in a Manner that shewed both his Integrity and the Freedom of his Conversation with those who have a prescriptive Right to Servility and Adulation. He had received a Present of a fine Tortoise-shell Snuff-box lined with Gold, and painted on the Inside of the Lid with a View of

Venice.

* D. S. 318.

† See Vol. V. p. 257.

‡ D. S. 319, 320.

Venice. This Present he shewed one Day to *Harley*, who having admired the Painting and the Workmanship, at last spied a Figure studded on the Outside of the Bottom, which he thought resembled a Goose, upon which turning to the Doctor, ‘*Jonathan*, says he, I think they have made a Goose of thee.’ ‘Yes, my Lord, says the Doctor; but, if your Lordship will look a little further, you will see that I am driving a Snail before me;’ which indeed happened to be the Device†. To this the Earl coolly replied, ‘That is severe enough, *Jonathan*, but I deserve it.’

It is equally true and equally evident, that *Swift* had no Expectations of Advantage from his Connection with these Persons, that he knew they could not long preserve their Power, that he did not honour it while it lasted, and that he disdained pecuniary Obligations.

‘I USE the Ministry, says he, like Dogs*, because I expect they will use me so—I never knew a Ministry do any Thing for those whom they make Companions of their Pleasures, but I care not.’

IN the Summer of 1711, he foresaw the Ruin of the Ministry, by those Misunderstandings† among themselves, which at length effected it; and it was not only his Opinion, but their own, that if they could not carry a Peace, they would not be able to keep themselves out of the *Tower*, even though they should agree.—In order therefore to facilitate this great Event, *Swift* wrote *The Conduct of the Allies*§, a Piece which he confessed cost him much Pains, and which succeeded even beyond his Expectation. It was published on the 27th of

U 3

November,

† D. S. 146.

* D. S. 322. Letters to STELLA.

† D. S. 331.

§ See Vol. V. p. 272.

November, 1711 ||, just ten Days before the Parliament met, and, before the 28th of January, above eleven thousand were sold, seven Editions having been printed in *England*, and three in *Ireland*. The Tory Members in both Houses who spoke, drew all their Arguments from it, and the Resolutions * which were printed in the Votes, and which would never have passed but for *The Conduct of the Allies*, were little more than Quotations from it.

FROM this Time until the Year 1713, he continued to exert † himself with unwearied Diligence in the Service of the Ministry; and, while he was at *Windsor*, just at the Conclusion of the Peace of *Utrecht*, he drew the first Sketch of, *The History of the last Session of Parliament, and the Peace of Utrecht*. † The Work would have been published soon after, if his Friends in the Ministry had not disagreed about it; and, after the Queen's Death he spent much Time in improving and correcting it; but, it was not published until April 1758, by *George Faulkner*, who printed it from the Manuscript prepared and corrected by the Author for the Press.

DURING all this Time he received no Gratuity or Reward until the Year 1713, and then he accepted the Deanry of *St. Patrick's, Dublin*.

IT may, perhaps, be thought strange, that his Friends did not rather procure him a Bishoprick in *England*, and place him in the House of Lords, where his political Eloquence might have been employed with great Advantage; but this was not in their Power, ** and they might be willing to secure

|| D. S. 335.

* D. S. 337. *Let. to STELLA.*

† D. S. 156.

† D. S. 340. *Letter to P. 10th*

January 1721.

** D. S. 343. *Let. to Lord Oxf.*

secure to him such Advantage as they could, knowing their own Instability, and foreseeing their Fall.

BUT, with whatever View, or from whatever Cause the Deanry of St. *Patrick's* was given him, he received it with less Pleasure than he would have done a Settlement with much less Power and Profit in *England*.

HE immediately crossed the Channel to take Possession of his new Dignity, but did not stay † in *Ireland* more than a Fortnight, being urged by an hundred Letters to hasten back, and reconcile Lord *Oxford* and Lord *Bolingbroke*, the Consequences of whose Misunderstanding were justly dreaded by their Friends.

WHEN he returned he found their Quarrels and Coldness encreased, and having predicted their Ruin from this very Cause, he laboured to bring about a Reconciliation, as that upon which the whole Interest of their Party depended.

WITH this View he contrived to bring them to Lord *Masham's* at St. *James's*, and Lord and Lady *Masham* being acquainted with his Purpose, left him alone with them; he then expostulated with them both, but to little Effect, being able only to engage them to go to *Windsor* the next Day, still hoping, that if he could keep them together, they would come to some Agreement, well knowing, that in Absence the Mind perpetually revolves the recent Offences of a Friend, and heightens them by every possible Aggravation; but, that when the Offended and the Offender meet, the dying Sparks of Esteem or Kindness often brighten into a Flame, the Remembrance of past Pleasure and Confidence returns, and mutually inclines them to secure by an

† D. S. 340. Letter. SWIFT to Oxford.

an Accommodation, that which they feel they cannot lose without Regret.

SWIFT soon after followed them, but was told by Lord *Bolingbroke*, that his Scheme had come to Nothing; and, he had the Mortification to observe that they grew more cold to each other every Day. In the mean Time Lord *Oxford's* Credit grew less and less, and the Queen's Health visibly declined.

SWIFT, however, contrived yet once more to meet them at Lord *Masbam's*, and was again left alone with them; this was the last Time they ever met, and he spoke to them both with great Freedom, but at length despairing of his Purpose, he told them he would retire, for that all was gone; *Bolingbroke* whispered him that he was right, but *Oxford* said all would do well.

SWIFT still adhered to his Opinion, and therefore went in a Day or two to *Oxford* by the Coach, and thence to the House of a Friend in *Berkshire*, where he continued until the Queen's Death, which happened in about ten Weeks.

WHILE he was at this Place, his Mind was still busy for his Friends, and he wrote a Discourse, called, * *Free Thoughts on the present State of Affairs*, which he thought might be useful at that Juncture, and sent it up to *London*; but some Difference of Opinion happening between him and Lord *Bolingbroke* concerning it, the Publication was delayed until the Queen's Death, and then he recalled his Copy, † which was afterwards deposited with the late Alderman || *Barber*, and having been since published will be found in *Vol. 3. p. 351.*

A FEW

* See *Vol. IX. p. 209.* † *Let. to POPE, 10th January 1721.*

|| GEORGE FAULKNER, the Printer and Publisher

A FEW Weeks after the Death of the Queen, he went back to his Station in *Ireland*, all his Connections with the Court being broken, and all his Expectations disappointed.

BUT, it would be an Injury to *Swift* not to stop a Moment here, and, before we descend with him into the Vale of private Life, look back, as from an Eminence, upon the Country we have passed.

FEW of those who have been permitted to associate with Persons greatly superior in Rank and Fortune, who have climbed in the Retinue of Power, and been distinguished by reflected Greatness, have been able to sustain the native Dignity of their own Character, without stooping as they ascended the Hill, or being blinded by the Light that made them conspicuous to others.

LET it therefore be recorded to the Honour of Dr. *Swift*, and to animate others by his Example and Reward, that during his Connection with those who were in the highest Rank, and who in every Rank would have been great, he would never suffer Himself to be treated but as an Equal, and repulsed every Attempt to hold him in Dependence, or keep him at a Distance, with the utmost Resentment and Indignation.

It happened upon some Occasion, that *Harley* sent him a Bank Bill of Fifty Pounds by his private Secretary,

of SWIFT's genuine Works, had a Letter from the Author to the Alderman, to give him what Manuscripts he had of his, amongst which was, Free Thoughts on the present State of Affairs; which BARBER told FAULKNER was ready for the Press when the Queen dyed: But, upon Messengers being sent to search his Printing-Office, he and his Journeymen broke the Forms to Pieces before the State Messengers got Admittance.

Secretary, Mr. *Lewis*, which *Swift* instantly returned, with a Letter of Expostulation and Complaint; *Harley* invited him to dine, but he refused; he wrote to Mr. *Lewis* * to mediate between them, desiring him to be reconciled, but *Swift* sent Word that he expected farther Satisfaction. *Harley* replied, if he would but come and see him, he would make him easy; but *Swift* insisted that he should apologize by Message, and declared, that, otherwise, *he would cast him off*.

It is possible that this Favour might have been rejected as not worth his Acceptance; but, it is certain, that if it had been of greater Value, it would not have atoned for any Indecorum in the Offer, or have induced *Swift*, to suffer an Oligation from those whom he did not esteem, for he refused the Place of Historiographer with Disdain, because it was in the Disposal of a Person † whom he regarded with Disgust and Contempt.

He would not suffer even negative Incivilities from those who if by their Station they had not been his Superiors, would have been his Equals by Learning and Parts. It happened that having one Day dined with Mr. *St John*, who was then Secretary of State, and remarked that he appeared to be much out of Temper, he took the first Opportunity to see him alone, and warned him never to behave to him with silent Reserve, for that he would not be treated like a School-Boy. ‡ I expect, says he, that if you hear or see any Thing to my Disadvantage you would let me know it in plain Words, and not put me in Pain to guess by
the

* D. S. 324-5. Letter to Stella.

† The Duke of Kent. See his Letter to POPE, dated 10 Jan. 1721. Vol. VII.

‡ D. S. 327. Letter to Stella.

the Change or Coldness of your Countenance or Behaviour; for it is what I would hardly bear from a crowned Head, and I think no Subject's Favour is worth it.

THE Secretary received the Reproof like a Friend, as it was given, and apologized for his Behaviour by saying, that Business had kept him up several whole Nights, and drinking one more; and to make up Matters, he pressed the Doctor to stay to Dinner, which however he declined, as well because he would not encourage a second Offence by too easily passing over the first, as because he was engaged with another Friend.

IF in this Representation of his Behaviour, as it is in many Particulars taken from his Letters to *Stella*, he should be suspected of having somewhat exaggerated to gratify his Vanity, he may be abundantly justified by a Letter still extant, which he wrote to Lord *Oxford* after the Connection between them was broken. 'When I was with you', says he, 'I have said more than once, that I would never allow Quality or Station to make any Difference between Men.—I loved you just so much the worse for your Station—In your publick Capacity you have often *angered* me to the Heart, but as a private Man never.—I was too proud to be vain of the Honour you did me. I was never afraid of offending you, nor am I now in any Pain for the Manner I write to you in.

NEITHER was this Conduct the Effect of Pride and Self-sufficiency, but of true Dignity of Mind, for he exacted nothing which, in his turn, he did not pay, nor asked more for himself than for others, whose Pretensions or Circumstances were the same.

WHEN he was desired by Lord *Oxford* to introduce Doctor *Parnell* to his Acquaintance, he refused upon this Principle, that a Man of Genius

was a Character superior to that of a Lord in a high Station : He therefore obliged his Lordship to walk with his Treasurer's Staff from Room to Room through his own Levee, enquiring which was Doctor *Parnell*, in order to introduce himself, and beg the Honour of his Acquaintance.

It was known by an Accident, after his Memory failed, that he allowed an Annuity of fifty Guineas to Mrs. *Dingley* ; but, instead of doing this with the Parade of a Benefactor, or gratifying his Pride by making her feel her Dependance, he always pretended that he acted only as her Agent, and that the Money he paid her, was the Produce of a certain Sum that she had in the Funds ; and, the better to save Appearances, he always took her Receipt, and sometimes would pretend, with great seeming Vexation, that she drew upon him before he had received her Money from *London*.

As to his political Principles, if his own Account of them is to be believed, he abhorred Whiggism only in those who made it consist in damning the Church, reviling the Clergy, abetting the Dissenters, and speaking contemptibly of revealed Religion. He always declared himself against a Popish Successor to the Crown, whatever Title he might have by Proximity of Blood ; nor did he regard the right Line, upon any other Account, than as it was established by Law, and had much Weight in the Opinions of the People ; he was of Opinion, that when the Grievances suffered under the present Government, became greater than those which might probably be expected from changing it by Violence, a Revolution was justifiable, and this he believed to have been the Case in that which was brought about by the Prince of *Orange*. He had a mortal Antipathy.

pathy against * standing Armies in Times of Peace, and was of Opinion, that our Liberty could never be placed upon a firm Foundation until the antient Law should be revived, by which our Parliaments were made annual; he abominated the political Scheme of setting up a monied Interest in Opposition to the Landed, and was an Enemy to temporary Suspensions of the *Habeas Corpus* Act. If some Asperities that cannot be justified have escaped his Pen in Papers, which were hastily written in the first Ardour of his Zeal, and often after great Provocation from those who wrote against him, surely they may without the Exertion of Angelic Benevolence be forgiven.

THAT he was not at any Time a Bigot to Party, and that he did not indiscriminately transfer his Resentments from Principles to Persons, was so evident by his Conduct, that it was a usual Subject of Raillery towards him, among the Ministers, that he never came to them *without a Whig in his Sleeve*; and, although he doth not appear to have asked any Thing for himself, yet he often pressed Lord Oxford in Favour of Mr. Addison, Mr. Congreve, Mr. Rowe, and Mr. Steele, with whom, except Mr. Steele, he frequently conversed, during all Lord Oxford's Ministry, chusing his Friends by their personal Merit, without examining how far their Notions agreed with the Politicks then in Vogue; and, in particular, his Friendship with † Mr. Addison continued inviolable, and with as much Kindness as when they used to meet at Lord Halifax's or Lord Sommers's, who were Leaders of the opposite Party.

* See his Letter to Mr. POPE, Jan. 10, 1721, Vol. VII. p. 21.

† Letter to POPE, Ibid.

AMONG other Persons with whom he was intimately acquainted during this gay Part of his Life*, was Mrs. *Vanbomrigh*. She was a Lady of good Family, the Daughter of Mr. *Stone*, the Commissioner, and Niece to the Accomptant General of Ireland.

SHE was the Widow of Mr. *Bartholomew Vanbomrigh*, first a Merchant of *Amsterdam*, and afterwards of *Dublin*, who was appointed Commissary of the Stores by King *William*, upon his Expedition into Ireland; a Place, which, during the War, was computed to be worth 6000 Pounds *per Ann.* After the Affairs of Ireland were settled, he was appointed Muster-master-General, and a Commissioner of the Revenue, and laid out about 12,000 *l.* in the Purchase of forfeited Estates: But, although he received the Produce of this Estate, and enjoyed his Appointments thirteen Years, yet when he died, in 1703, his Expences had been so nearly equal to his Revenue, that his whole Fortune, the Value of his Estate included, amounted only to 16,000 *l.* This Sum he directed, by his Will, to be divided equally between his Wife and four Children, of which, two were Sons and two were Daughters. The Sons died soon after their Father, and their Share of his Fortune fell to the Daughters.

IN 1709, the Widow and the two young Ladies came to *England*, where they were visited by Persons of the first Quality, and *Swift* lodging within a few Doors of their House in *Bury-street*, *St. James's*, used to be much there, coming and going without Ceremony, as if he had been one of

* D. S. 258, and following. Orrery 71, and following.

of the Family: During this Familiarity he became insensibly a Kind of Preceptor to the young Ladies, particularly the eldest, who was then about twenty Years old, was much addicted to reading, and a great Admirer of Poetry. In a Person of this Disposition, it was natural for such a Character as that of *Swift* to excite Admiration; a Passion, which by frequent Converse, was softened into Complacency, and Complacency was at length improved into Love.

LOVE itself, perhaps, was in this Case complicated with Vanity, which would have been highly gratified by an Alliance with the first Wit of the Age; and, thus what neither could have effected alone, was done by the joint Effort of both, and she ventured to make the Doctor a Proposal of Marriage. It is probable, that his Connections with Mrs. *Johnson* at this Time were such, that he could not with Honour accept this Proposal, whatever Pleasure or Advantage it might promise; however, it is certain, he declined it, although without assigning any other Engagement as the Reason.

He appears first to have affected to believe her in Jest, then to have rallied her on so whimsical a Choice, and at last to have put her off without an absolute Refusal, perhaps, partly because he was unwilling to give her Pain, and partly because he could not refuse her with a good Grace, otherwise than by discovering some Particulars, which he was willing to conceal. While he was in this Situation, he wrote the Poem called * *Cadmus* and *Vanessa*, the principal View of which seems to have been at once to compliment and to railly her, to apologize for his Conduct, and

* See Vol. II, p. 63.

soften a tacit Denial by leaving the Event undetermined.

THIS Poem appears to have been written about the Year 1713, a short Time before he left *Vanessa* and the rest of his Friends in *England*, and returned to the Place of his Exile, which he so called, and always mentioned with Regret.

IN the Year 1714 Mrs. *Vanbomrigh* died, and having lived at an Expence much greater than her Fortune would bear, she left some Debts unpaid.

HER two Daughters, whose Fortunes she had also lessened, she appointed joint Executrixes of her Will, an Office which however troublesome, the Situation of their Affairs obliged them to accept; it appears too, that they had contracted some Debts in their own Right, which it was not in their Power immediately to pay, and therefore to avoid any Trouble they followed the Dean into *Ireland*.

UPON his Arrival to take Possession of his Deanry, and his Return after the Queen's Death, he was received, according to the Account of Lord Orrery and Mr. *Deane Swift**, with every possible Mark of Contempt and Indignation, especially by the Populace, who not only reviled and cursed him, but pelted him with Stones and Dirt as he passed along the Streets. The Author of the Observations†, on the contrary, affirms, that he was received by all Ranks of Men, not only with Kindness, but Honour, the Tories being then in full Power, as well in *Ireland*, as in *England*, and *Swift's* Service to the Church, and Credit at Court being well known. This indeed was true, when he went to take Possession, which was in the Reign

* D. S. 178. 183.

† J. R. 87.

of Queen *Anne*; but, when he returned to his Deanry, in the Reign of *George I.* the Power of the Tories and the Dean's Credit at Court were at an End; Circumstances which might well cause the Rabble at least to forget his Services to the Church. It is certain that great Clamour was then raised by the new Men against the late Ministry, with whom *Swift* had been closely connected; they were charged with a Design to bring in the Pretender, and the same Design was consequently imputed to *Swift*, whom it was therefore considered by some as a Qualification for Preferment to revile and oppose. Which Party the Rabble took, whose Fault it has never been to coincide implicitly with a Court, Posterity might judge for themselves; but, it seems probable, that these Accounts, however contradictory, may both be true, as that *Swift* at this Time might be the *Sacheveral* of Ireland; followed by the Mob of one Faction with Execrations, and by the other with Shouts of Applause.

It is however agreed that the * Archbishop of *Dublin*, and some of his old Friends in the Chapter, set themselves against his Measures, with all their Force, and laboured to disappoint him in the Exercise of his Power by every Art of Opposition and Delay. But, whatever Prejudice they had conceived against him was soon removed, by the disinterested Integrity of his Conduct, which was so apparent and striking, that they soon regarded him with Respect and Veneration, and almost implicitly acquiesced in whatever he proposed.

THIS Removal from *England* to *Ireland* was the great Event which determined the Colour of his Life, bounded his Views, and shewed him at once

* Dr. KING.

what he might possess, and for what he might hope.

THERE is a Time when every Man is struck with a Sense of his Mortality, and feels the Force of a Truth to which he hath consented meerly from Custom, without considering its Certainty, or Importance. This Time seldom happens in the chearful Simplicity of Infancy, or in the first Impatience of Youth, when the World is all before us, when every Object has the Force of Novelty, and every Desire of Pleasure receiveth auxiliary Strength from Curiosity; but, after the first Heat of the Race, when we stop to recover from our Fatigue, we naturally consider the Ground before us, and then perceive that at the End of the Course are Clouds and Darkness, that the Grave will soon intercept our Pursuit of temporal Felicity; and, that, if we cannot stretch to the Goal that is beyond it, we run in vain, and spend our Strength for Nought. Great Disappointments which change our general Plan, and make it necessary to enter the World, as it were, a second Time, seldom fail to alarm us with the Brevity of Life, and repress our Alacrity by precluding our Hopes.

THE Dean, whether by the Vigour and Activity of his Imagination, the Multitude of his Ideas, or the Ardour of his Pursuits, escaped the Force of this Thought until his Retreat to *Ireland* on the * Death of the Queen; and, then indeed it came upon him with such Influence, that after fifteen Years it constantly recurred when he first awaked in the Morning, and was not dismissed until he again began to sleep†.

As

* *August 1, 1714.*

† See *Letter to Bolingbroke*, in *Pope's Works*, printed by George Faulkner, Vol. IX. p. 95.

As soon as he was settled at *Dublin*, Mrs. *Johnson* removed from the Country to be near him, but they still lived in separate Houses; his Residence was at the Deanry, and her's in Lodgings on the *North Side* of the River *Liffey*.

THE Dean kept two publick Days every Week; and, although the Circle of his Visitors * is said at first to have been small, yet it soon increased, and always consisted of the best Company.

THOSE who were more particularly the Companions of his Choice, were such as would have done Honour to any Character; they were the *Grattans*, seven Brothers, the Sons of Doctor *Grattan*, a venerable and hospital Clergyman, who gave them all a liberal Education. The eldest was a Justice of Peace, and lived reputably on his Patrimony in the Country; another was a Physician, and another a † Merchant, both eminent in their Professions; three others were Clergymen, who had a competent Provision in the Church, and the youngest was Fellow of *Trinity-College, Dublin*, and Master of the great Free-School at *Enniskilling*. They were all Persons of great Merit, as generally acquainted and as much beloved, as any in the Kingdom. The *Jacksons*, a Family of which both Men and Women were genteel, agreeable and well bred, such Companions as no wise Man ever wanted, if they could be had. *George Rochfort* and *Peter Ludlow*, Men of Fortune, Learning, Wit, Humour and Virtue; and, Mr. *Mathew Ford*, deemed the best Lay-Scholar of his Time: These, with the Fellows of the *College*, Doctor *Walmesley*, Doctor *Helsham*, Doctor *Delany*, Doctor *Stopford*, now Bishop

* D. S. 108.

† Sir JAMES GRATTAN, Lord-Mayor of *Dublin* in the Year 1726. ‡ J. R. 90, and following.

shop of *Cloyne**, and Doctor *Sheridan*, Lady *Eustace*, Mrs. *Moore*, Lady *Betty Rochfort*, and Mrs. *Ludlow*, with Mrs. *Johnson*, and her Friends, were the Persons with whom *Swift* spent his Leisure Hours, from the Year 1714 to the Year 1720, a Period in which it has been erroneously said that his Choice of Companions shewed him of a depraved Taste. There was indeed among his Companions one Person who could derive no Honour from his Lineage, a Foundling, whom *Swift* therefore used to call *Melchisedeck*, because *Melchisedeck* is said to have had neither Father nor Mother; this Gentleman's Name was *Worrall*, he was a Clergyman, a Bachelor of Divinity, a Reader, and a Vicar of his Cathedral, as well as of *Christ-Church*, and Master of the Song. He was nearly of the Dean's own Standing in the College, had good Sense, and much Humour. He was married to a Woman of great Sprightliness, Good-Nature, and Generosity, remarkably cleanly, and elegant in her Person, in her House, and at her Table: But, there is another particular in *Worrall's* Character which greatly contributed to his Intimacy with the Dean; he was a good Walker. The Dean used this Exercise in an immoderate Degree, under the Notion of its being absolutely necessary, not to Health only, but to Cleanliness, by keeping the Pores of the Skin clear, and throwing off Impurities by Perspiration. *Worrall's* Situation in the Church naturally engaged his frequent Attendance upon the Dean; this Attendance commonly ended in a Walk, and the Walk in their dining together at *Worrall's*, or at the Deanry; the Dean being a single Man, was oftener a Guest to *Worrall*, than *Worrall* was a Guest to him, and this brought on an Agreement, that the Dean should

* Dyed ———, and succeeded by Doctor Robert Johnson.

should dine with him whenever he would, at a certain Rate, and invite as many Friends as he pleased upon the same Terms. This Gentleman * is lately dead, and left a large Sum of Money to be disposed of to publick Charities, at the Discretion of his Executors, 500*l.* of which was appropriated to the Dean's Hospital, 500*l.* to *Steevens's*, 500*l.* to the *Lying-in*, and considerable Sums to other Hospitals.

THE Dean when he first settled at *Dublin*, was in Debt, a Situation which ill suited his great Spirit, and determined him to a severe Oeconomy, with which this Agreement with † *Worral* very well suited. On his publick Days, however, the Dignity of his Station was sustained with the utmost Elegance and Decorum, under the Direction of Mrs. *Johnson*, who yet appeared in the Circle, without any Character distinct from the rest of the Company. She was, however, frequently invited with the Dean, whether to Entertainments or Parties of Pleasure, although not so generally as if she had been his Wife; she visited and received Visits as far as the Practice is a meer Ritual of good Breeding ‡; her Friendships seem to have been still among the Men, but, she was treated with great Politeness by the Ladies.

THE Dean's Mind had been now so filled with Politicks, that he found it impracticable to excel as a Preacher, his first and most laudable Ambition; and, frequently declared that, 'although he sometimes attempted to exert himself in the Pulpit ||, yet he could never rise higher than preaching Pamphlets.' He was, however, still a good Dean, and a good Priest; he applied himself to

* D. S. 290. J. R. 92. † J. R. 92.

‡ D. S. 92. || J. R. 42.

to the Care of his Deanery, his Cathedral, its Regulations, its Income and OEconomy, with great Diligence; he renewed the primitive Practice of celebrating the Holy Communion every *Sunday*, and at this Sacrament he was not only constantly present, but he consecrated and administered it with his own Hands in a Manner equally graceful and devout; he attended at Church every Morning, and generally preached in his Turn; he also constantly attended the Performance of the Anthem on a *Sunday* Evening, although he did not understand Musick, to see that the Choir did not neglect their Duty.

As to his Employment at Home, he seems to have had no Heart to apply himself to Study of any Kind, but to have resigned himself wholly to such Amusements as offered, that he might not think of his Situation, the Misfortune of his Friends, and the Disappointment of his Hope; such at least is the Account that he gives to Mr. *Gay*, in his Letter dated *January* the 8th 1722-3. 'I was three Years, says he, reconciling myself to the Scene and Business to which Fortune hath condemned me, and Stupidity was what I had Recourse to.'

It has been suggested, that the Acquaintance he fell into with Men of Learning made it necessary for him about this Time to review his Greek and Latin; and, to obtain some Acquaintance with Church History; but surely, he who had studied * eight Hours a Day for seven Years, or according to Mr. *Deane Swift* †, ten Hours a Day for nine Years, he who had read and extracted the Fathers more than sixteen Years before, had little Occasion to review his Greek and Latin,

or

* J. R. 101.

† D. S. 271, 272, 276.

or acquaint himself with Church-History, lest he should not sustain his Character among learned Men; for, except it be pretended that others were able to acquire more Knowledge in less Time and with less Labour, it must be allowed, that *Swift* was likely to be always the most knowing of his Company. Lord *Orrery* says, that he was little acquainted with the Mathematicks, and never considered the Science*, except as an Object of Ridicule; but, the Author of the *Observations* affirms, on the contrary, that he had acquired considerable Mathematical Knowledge, and that he † had seen him more than once undertake to solve an Algebraic Problem by Arithmetick.

THE first remarkable Event of his Life that occurred after his Settlement at the Deanry, was his Marriage to Mrs. *Johnson*, after a most intimate Friendship of more than sixteen Years; this was in the Year 1716, and the Ceremony was performed by Dr. *Asb*, then Bishop of *Clogher*, to whom the Dean had been a Pupil in *Trinity-College, Dublin*.

BUT, whatever were the Motives of this Marriage, † the Dean and the Lady continued to live afterwards just in the same Manner they had lived before. Mrs. *Dingley* was still the inseparable Companion of *Stella*, wherever she went, and she never resided at the Deanry, except when the Dean was seized with violent Fits of Giddiness, which sometimes lasted near a Month.

UNTIL this Time he had continued his Visits to *Vanessa*, who, although she had suffered very great pecuniary Losses, had yet preserved her Reputation and her Friends; for, she was visited by many

* *Orrery* 7, 101.
† *Pope's Letters*, 4.

† *J. R.* 101.

many Persons of Rank, Character and Fortune, of both Sexes; particularly Mrs. *Conolly**, a Lady of very high Reputation, the late most excellent Bishop of *Cloyne*†, and the late Judge *Lindsey*, and the Lord Chief Justice *Marlay*.

THE Dean appears still to have the Character of her Preceptor, to have directed her Progress in Literature, and explained and illustrated the Authors she had read; but soon after his Marriage he visited her on another Account; he went as an Advocate for Mr. Dean *Winter*, whom he took with him, a Gentleman who was a professed Admirer of *Vanessa*, and had made her some Overtures of Marriage; but, though he had an Estate of near eight hundred Pounds a Year, besides three hundred Pounds a Year Preferment in the Church, yet *Vanessa* rejected the Proposal* in such Terms as that it was never repeated. She was also addressed by Dr. *Price*, who was afterwards Archbishop of *Cashel*, but without Success. From this Time the Dean's Visits were much less frequent. In the Year 1717, her Sister died, and the whole Remains of the Family Fortune being then centered in *Vanessa*, she retired to *Cellbridge*, to a small House and Estate, near eight Miles distant from *Dublin*, which had been purchased by her Father.

FROM this Place she wrote frequently to the Dean, and he answered her Letters: In these Letters she still pressed him to marry her, and in his
Answers

* Daughter to General CONNINGHAM, and Wife to the Right Hon. WILLIAM CONOLLY, Esq; Speaker to the House of Commons, one of the Lords Justices of Ireland, and a Commissioner of the Revenue.

† Dr. BERKELEY.

‡ D. Swift, 264, 265.

Answers he still raillied, and still avoided a positive Denial. At length, however, she insisted with great Ardour and great Tendernefs upon his positive and immediate Acceptance or Refusal of her as a Wife. The Dean wrote an Answer and delivered it with his own Hand.

As this Letter of *Vanessa's*, which was written in 1723, is a Demonstration that she was then utterly ignorant of the Dean's Marriage with *Stella*, and as she appears to have known it almost immediately afterwards, it is probable that the Dean's Answer communicated the fatal Secret, which at once precluded all her Hopes, and accounted for his former Conduct*; it is probable too, that the Repentment which he felt at having it thus extorted from him, was the Cause of the Manner in which he delivered the Letter; for, having thrown it down upon her Table, he hasted back to his Horse, and returned immediately to *Dublin*.

THIS Letter the unhappy Lady did not survive many Weeks; however, she was sufficiently composed to cancel a Will that she had made in the Dean's Favour, and to make another, in which she left her Fortune, which long Retirement and Frugality had in a great Measure restored, to her two Executors Dr. *Berkeley* the Bishop of *Cloyne*, and Mr. *Marshall*†, one of the King's Serjeants at Law, Gentlemen whose Characters are excellent in the highest Degree.

IF *Vanessa*, by her Fondness for the Gaieties of Life, encouraged by the Example, and perhaps, influenced by the Authority of a Mother, lessened her Fortune at an Age when few have been discreet,

Y

it

* Deane Swift, 264. Orrery, 78.

† ROBERT MARSHALL, Esq; afterwards a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

it cannot be denied that she retrieved it by Prudence and Oeconomy, at an Age when many have continued dissolute, and was frugal after the Habit of Expencc had made Frugality difficult; if she could not subdue a Passion which has tyrannized over the strongest and purest Minds, she does not appear to have known that it was criminal, or to have desired that it might be unlawfully gratified. She pressed a Person whom she believed single to marry her, but it does not therefore follow, that she was his Concubine, much less that she desired to be reputed so, and was then solicitous to incur the Infamy which hath since been thrown upon her. It cannot surely be believed that the shameless and reputed Concubine, even of *Swift*, would have been visited by Ladies of Credit and Fashion, or solicited in Marriage by two Clergymen of Eminence and Fortune, to whom her Story and Character must have been well known: Besides, Dr. *Berkeley*, after having carefully perused all the Letters that passed between them, which *Vanessa* directed to be published, with the Poem, found that they contained nothing that could bring the least Disgrace upon the Dean; her's indeed were full of passionate Declarations of her Love; his contained only Compliments, Excuses, Apologies, and Thanks for trifling Presents. There was not in either the least Trace of a criminal Commerce, which if there had been any such, it would in so long an Intercourse, have been extremely difficult to avoid; and, if she desired to be reputed his Concubine, it cannot be supposed that she concealed any Letter which would have proved that she was so, especially as it would have gratified her Resentment against him for refusing to make her his Wife*.

* J. R. 121, 122, 123.

If it appears, therefore, that there was no criminal Commerce between them, and, that she did not desire the World should believe there had been any, it follows from her directing the Publication of the Poem, of which perhaps, she possessed the only Copy, that, in her Sense of the Verses, none of them implied a Fact which would dishonour her Memory, and this appears also to have been the Opinion of her Executors*, who, altho' they suppressed the Letters, because they contained nothing that could do her Honour, yet published the Poem, by which, it must therefore be supposed, they did not think she would be disgraced.

It has indeed been said, that *Vanessa*, from the Time she was deserted, devoted herself like *Ariadne*, to *Bacchus*, and perhaps it is true, that in the Anguish of disappointed Desire, she had Recourse to that dreadful Opiate† which never fails to complicate Diseases with Trouble, to leave the Sufferer more wretched when its Operation is at an End, to divide Life into Frenzy and Despair, and at once to hasten the Approach, and encrease the Terrors of Death. But, it cannot be thought, that when she made her Will, she was either intoxicated or delirious, because the perfect Exercise of Reason is essential to the Validity of the Act. No Particular of her Distress, therefore, can weaken the Arguments drawn from the Direction in her Will to publish the Poem and the Letters, of which the Gratification of her Vanity was so evidently the Motive, that it is difficult to conceive how it could be overlooked.

FROM 1716, to 1720, is a Chasm in the Dean's Life, which it has been found difficult to fill up.

Y 2

That

* J. R. 123.

† Ibid.

* That he had no need to repeat his College Exercises, hath been shewn already; and that, in this Interval he went through a voluminous Course of Ecclesiastical History, seems farther improbable, by a Letter to Lord *Bolingbroke*, dated April 5, 1729, in which it appears, that he was then reading *Baronius*, and *Baronius* was the only Piece of Church History that was found in his Library. Lord *Orrery* thinks, with great Reason, that he employed this Time upon *Gulliver's Travels*.

THE Author of the *Observations*, indeed, supposes the Dean's Genius to be verging towards a Decline, in the Year 1723, and that *Gulliver's Travels* were written after that Time; but, in both these Suppositions, he is probably mistaken; although in the former he seems to be favoured by a Passage in a Letter written by the Dean himself, to Mr. *Pope*, dated Sept. 20, 1723.

THAT his Genius was not declining in 1723, appears by the *Draper's Letters*, which were not written until 1724, and of these the *Observer* himself says, 'his Genius never shone out in greater Strength than on that and the subsequent Occasions,' a Truth which is universally acknowledged. That *Gulliver's Travels* were written before that Time, is equally evident, for *Swift* went into the North of Ireland, early in the Spring of 1725, † and in a Letter to Dr. *Sheridan*, during his Residence there, he puts him in mind of his Description of the *Yahoos*, so that *Sheridan* must have seen the Travels in Manuscript, at least, in the Year 1724. The Dean also, in a Letter to Mr. *Pope*, dated Sept. 29, 1725, says, 'Oh! if the World had but a Dozen *Arbutnots* in it, I would

* *J. R.* 101.

† See Vol. XII. p. 190.

' would burn my Travels.' It may reasonably be concluded, therefore, that his Travels were then all written, and that at this Time he was reviewing and retouching them for the Press, especially as they were published in 1726; and as he was otherwise employed in 1724, they must have been written, at least, before 1723.

UPON the whole, perhaps, it is not an extravagant Conjecture, that having, according to his own Account, wholly neglected his Studies for the first three Years of his Residence at the Deanry, and indulged the Resentment which his Disappointment had produced, until it could be contained no longer, he conceived the first Notion of expressing it in such a Manner, as might correct the Enormities which he exposed; and with this View, immediately began his Travels, of which the first Copy was, probably, finished before the Year 1720.

ABOUT this Time the Dean, who had already acquired the Character of a Humourist and a Wit, was first regarded with general Kindness, as the Patriot of *Ireland*. He wrote a Proposal for the universal Use of *Irish* Manufactures; a Tract, which as it was apparently calculated for the Service of *Ireland*, and zealously condemned a Sacrifice of Interest to *England*, made him very popular; but this Service would not, perhaps, have been so long and so zealously remembered, if a Prosecution had not been commenced against the Printer. *

As soon as this Measure was taken, the Importance of the Work was estimated by the Diligence of the Government to suppress it, and the Zeal and

Y 2

Integrity

* See Vol. IV. p. 19.

Integrity of the Writer were measured by the Danger he had incurred. No publick Notice, however, was taken of the Dean on this Occasion, and *Waters*, the Printer, after having been long harassed and imprisoned, at length obtained a *Noli Prosequi*.

THE Dean did not again appear in his political Character until the Year 1724. A Patent having been iniquitously procured by one *Wood*, to Coin 108,000*l.* in Copper, for the Use of *Ireland*, by which he would have acquired exorbitant Gain, and proportionably impoverished the Nation; the Dean, in the Character of a Drapier, wrote a Series of Letters to the People, urging them not to receive this Copper-Money. These Letters united the whole Nation in his Praise, filled every Street with his Effigies, and every Voice with Acclamations; and *Wood*, although he was long supported by those who prostituted the highest delegated Authority to the vilest Purposes, was at length compelled to withdraw his Patent, and his Money was totally suppressed.

UPON the Arrival of Lord *Carteret*, soon after the Publication of the fourth Letter, several Passages were selected as sufficient Ground for a Prosecution, and his Excellency and Council published a * Proclamation, offering 300*l.* Reward for a Discovery of the Author. This Proclamation gave the Dean a remarkable Opportunity to illustrate his Character. It happened that his Butler, whom he had employed as his Amanuensis, and who alone was trusted with the Secret, went out in the Afternoon of the Day of the Proclamation, without Leave, and stayed abroad the whole Night and part of the next Day. There was great Reason

* See Vol. IV. p. 128.

Reason to suspect that he had made an Informa-
tion, and having received his Reward would never
return. The Man, however, came home in the
Evening, and the Dean was advised by his Friends
to take no Notice of his Fault, lest he should be
provoked to a Breach of Trust, from the Dread
of which his Return had just delivered them: But
the Dean rejected this Council with the utmost
Disdain, and commanding the Man into his Pre-
sence, ordered him immediately to strip off his
Livery and leave the House. ' You Villain, said
' he, I know I am in your Power, and for that
' very Reason I will the less bear with your Inso-
' lence or Neglect.'

THE Man, in very submissive Terms, confessed
that he had been drinking all Night, and intreat-
ed to be forgiven, but *Swift* was inexorable; he
then begged that he might be confined in some
Part of the House so long as the Proclamation
could intitle him to any Reward, lest when he
was driven from his Service, and destitute of ano-
ther, the Temptation might be too strong for his
Virtue, and his Distress might involve him in a
Crime which he most abhorred. *Swift*, however,
was still inexorable, and the Man was dismissed.
During all the Time of Danger, *Swift* obstinately
refused to contribute one Farthing towards his
Support, nor could he be persuaded to see his
Face; but, when the Time limited in the Procla-
mation was expired, he was permitted to return
to his Service. Soon afterwards he was called
hastily up by the Dean, who, without any Preface,
again ordered him to strip off his Livery, put on
his own Cloaths, and then come to him again.
The poor Fellow, although he was greatly aston-
ished at this Proceeding, knew *Swift* too well to
expostulate, and therefore, with whatever Reluc-
tance,

tance, did as he had been commanded; when he returned, the Dean ordered the other Servants to be called up, who immediately attended, expecting that the Butler was to be dismissed *in terrorem*, and that they should be warned in very severe Terms of his Offence. *Swift*, as soon as they had ranged themselves before him, ordered them to take Notice, that *Robert* was no longer his Servant; 'he is now, said the Dean, Mr. *Blakeley*, 'the Verger of St. *Patrick's* Cathedral, a Place 'which I give him as a Reward for his Fidelity.' The Value of this Place is between thirty and forty Pounds a Year; * however, *Robert* would not quit his Master, but continued to be his Butler some Years afterwards. In this Instance the Dean exercised his Pride, his Fortitude, and his Equity, in a Manner peculiar to Himself; and, although there are many who would equally have rewarded such Fidelity, there are few who would have ventured to wait the Issue of so severe and dangerous a Probation.

FROM this Time the Dean's Influence in *Ireland* was almost without Bounds, he was consulted in whatever related to domestick Policy, and in particular to Trade. The Weavers always considered him as their Patron, and Legislator, after his Proposal for the Use of *Irish* Manufactures, and came frequently in a Body to receive his Advice in settling the Rates of their Stuffs, and the Wages of their Journeymen; and, when Elections were depending for the City of *Dublin*, many Corporations refused to declare themselves, until they knew his Sentiments and Inclinations. Over the Populace he was the most absolute Monarch that ever governed Men, and he was regarded by
Persons

* D. S. 190.

Persons of every Rank with Veneration and Esteem.

It appears by many of his Writings, that he lived in great Friendship and Familiarity with Lord *Carteret* during his Lieutenantcy, notwithstanding his Lordship had signed the Proclamation to discover him, as the Writer of the *Drapier's Letters*. *Swift*, indeed, remonstrated against this Proceeding, and once asked his Lordship ? how he could concur in the Prosecution of a poor honest Fellow, who had been guilty of no other Crime than that of Writing three or four Letters for the Instruction of his Neighbours, and the Good of his Country ? To this Question his Excellency replied in the Words of *Virgil*,

— *Regni novitas me talia cogit*
Moliri. —

He was equally diligent to recommend his Friends to Lord *Carteret* as he had been to recommend them to Lord *Oxford* *, and he did it with the same Dignity and Freedom. Pray, my Lord, said he one Day, have you the Honour to be acquainted with the *Grattans* ? My Lord answered, he had not : Why then, pray, my Lord, said *Swift*, † take Care to obtain it ; it is of great Consequence : The *Grattans*, my Lord, can raise ten thousand Men. He obtained a Living for his Friend, Dr. *Sheridan*, and he recommended several others of whom he knew nothing but that they were good Men.

He used also to remonstrate with great Freedom, against such Measures as he disapproved, and Lord *Carteret* having gained the Advantage of him in some

* *D. S.* 270.

† *J. R.* 95.

some Dispute concerning the Distresses of Ireland, he cried out in a Passion, *what the Vengeance brought you among us? get you gone, get you gone; pray God Almighty send us our Boobies back again.*

* A Reply which shewed at once the Turn, the Strength, and the Virtue of his Mind, as it was a fine Compliment to the Force of Reason, by which he had been just foiled, and was expressed with all the Vehemence of his Temper, and all the Peculiarity of his Wit.

HE went twice to England, on Visits to his Friends, after his Settlement at the Deanry, in the Years 1726, and 1727.

THERE is a Passage in one of his Letters to Dr. Sheridan, during his Visit in 1726, by which it appears, that he then had such an Offer of a Settlement in the Midst of his Friends, within twelve Miles of London, as, if he had been ten Years younger, he would gladly have accepted: But, I am now, says he, too old for new Schemes, and especially such as would bridle me in my Freedoms and Liberalities. He had also an Invitation from Lord Bolingbroke, to spend a Winter with him at his House on the Banks of the Loire in France. And this he would have accepted, but that he received an Account from Ireland, that Mrs. Johnson was dangerously ill.

MRS. Johnson's Constitution was tender and delicate, and, as the Dean himself says, she had not the *Stamina Vita*: In the Year 1724, she began visibly to decay, and in the Year 1726, was thought to be dying †. The Dean received the News with Agonies not to be felt, but by the tenderest and most ardent Friendship, nor conceived but by the
most

* J. R. 25.

† See Vol. VII. p. 300.

most lively Imagination, and immediately hasted back into *Ireland*.

It happened, however, that Mrs. *Johnson*, contrary to the Opinion of her Physician, recovered a moderate Share of Health, and the Dean, probably to complete some Design which in his haste, he had left unfinished, returned again to *England*, in 1727.

FROM *England* he was once more about to set out for *France*, upon Lord *Bolingbroke*'s Invitation, when News arrived of the King's † Death.

He had attended the late † Queen while she was Princess, in his former Excursion to *England*, and he had seen her twice in one Week, by her Royal Highness's Command in this: She had always treated the Dean with great Civility, and the Dean had treated her with his usual and peculiar Frankness. The third Day after the News of the late King's Death, he attended at Court, and kiss'd the King and the Queen's Hand upon their Accession, and was blamed by his Friends for deferring it so long.

WHAT Prospect he had of a Change in publick Affairs on this Event, or of any Advantage which such a Change might produce to himself or his Friends, doth not appear, but he was earnestly entreated to delay his Journey; and, when he had again determined to set out, he was upon some new Incidents again prevailed upon not to go, by the vehement Persuasion of some Persons, whom he says, he could not disobey. Many Schemes were proposed, in which he was eagerly solicited to engage, but he received them coldly; not as it appears, because he was determined no more
to

* See Vol. VII. p. 14.

† GEORGE I.

‡ CAROLINE, Consort of GEORGE II.

to enter into publick Life, but because the Schemes themselves were such as he did not approve : However, in the same Letter, in which he says, that, if the King had lived ten Days longer, he should not have dated it from *London*, but *Paris* ; he says, that his Share in the Hurry of Time would not be long, and that he should soon return.

HE was soon after seized with one of his Fits of Giddiness and Deafness, a Calamity which was greatly aggravated by the News that Mrs. *Johnson* was again so ill, that the Physicians despaired of her Life. Upon this Occasion he relapsed into the Agonies of Mind, which he had felt the Year before ; he expected by the next Post, to hear that she was dead, and intreated that he might be told no Particulars, but the Event in general, for that, his Age being then within three Months of Sixty, his Weakness and his Friendship would bear no more. As he despaired of seeing her alive, he determined not to return to *Ireland*, so soon as he had intended, but to pass the Winter either near *Salisbury* Plain, or in *France*. That he might not be interrupted by Company, and condemned to the Torment of suppressing his Sorrow ; to preserve the Rules of good Breeding, he quitted the House of Mr. *Pope*, at *Twickenham*, and retired to a Village near *London*, with a Female Relation for his Nurse. The next Letter that he received, he kept an Hour in his Pocket, before he could sufficiently fortify himself against the Shock which he expected when he should open it ; however, as *Stella's* Life ebbed by slow Degrees, and sometimes seemed at a Stand if not to flow, his Hope of a parting Interview revived, and he set out for *Ireland* as soon as he was able to travel.

HE found her alive, but, after having languished about two Months longer, she expired on the

28th of January, 1727, in the 44th Year of her Age, regretted by the Dean, with such Excess of Affection and Esteem, as the keenest Sensibility only could feel, and the most excellent Character excite.

BEAUTY, which alone has been the Object of universal Admiration and Desire, which alone has elevated the Possessor, from the lowest to the highest Station, has given Dominion to Folly, and armed Caprice with the Power of Life and Death, was in *Stella*, only the Ornament of intellectual Greatness; and Wit which has rendered Deformity lovely, and conferred Honour upon Vice, was in her only the Decoration of such Virtue, as without either Wit or Beauty, would have compelled Affection, Esteem, and Reverence.

HER Stature was tall, her Hair and Eyes black, her Complexion fair and delicate, her Features regular, soft, and animated, her Shape easy and elegant, and her Manner Feminine, Polite, and Graceful; there was a natural Musick in her Voice, and a pleasing Complacency in her Aspect when she spoke.

As to her Wit, it was confessed by all her Acquaintance, and particularly by the Dean, that she never failed to say the best Thing that was said when ever she was in Company, although her Companions were usually Persons of the best Understanding in the Kingdom.

BUT this dangerous Power was under the Direction of such Sweetness of Temper, such general Kindness, and Reluctance to give Pain, that she never indulged it at the Expence of another.

NEITHER was her Wit meerly of the colloquial Kind; she had great Force of poetical Fancy, could range her Thoughts, in a regular Composition,

tion, and express them in correct and harmonious Verse; of her Wit in Conversation, some Instances will be found in Vol. XII. under the Name of *Bons Mots*, and two Specimens of her Poetry are added as an Appendix to this Tract. Her Virtue was founded upon Humanity, and her Religion upon Reason; her Morals were uniform, but not rigid, and her Devotion was habitual, but not ostentatious.

His peculiar Connection with Mrs. *Johnson*, does indeed, appear to have been suspected, if not known, by his particular Acquaintance: One of whom had the Courage, indirectly, to blame his Conduct several Times, by setting before him the Example of a Clergyman of distinguished Merit, who married nearly in the same Circumstances; but, instead of concealing his Marriage, retired into thrifty Lodgings, * until he had made a Provision for his Wife, and then returned to the World, and became eminent for his Hospitality and Charity.

THE Dean, whether moved by these Representations, or whether by any other Motive, did at length earnestly desire that she might be publicly owned as his Wife; but as her Health was then declining, and his Oeconomy become more severe, she said, it was *too late*, † and insisted that they should continue to live as they had lived before; to this, the Dean in his Turn, consented, and ‡ suffered her to dispose intirely of her own Fortune, by her own Name, to a publick Charity when she died.

It appears by several little Incidents, that *Stella*, regretted and disapproved the Dean's Conduct, and

* J. R. 63.

† J. R. 56.

‡ J. R. 288.

and that she sometimes reproached him with Unkindness; for to such Regret and Reproach, he certainly alludes in the following Verses on her Birth-Day, in 1726:

*O THEN, whatever Heav'n intends,
Take Pity on your pitying Friends;
Nor let your Ills affect your Mind,
To Fancy they can be unkind;
Me, surely, me you ought to spare,
Who gladly would your Sufferings share.*

It seems, indeed, to be generally agreed, that *Stella* was destroyed by the Peculiarity of her Circumstances, and that the Fabrick, however weak by the Delicacy of its Composition, would not have fallen so soon, if the Foundation had not been injured by the slow Minings of Regret and Vexation.

BUT, it is also generally allowed, that in this Instance, as in every other, the Dean's Intention was upright, although his Judgment might be erroneous; and whatever Censure his Behaviour to *Stella* may draw upon him, it must insure him some Praise, and secure him against Calumny; for, it is a Demonstration that he was an absolute Master of those Passions, by which the greatest have been enslaved, and the best sometimes corrupted; and, if he could abstain from gratifying those Passions with a Lady whom he most admired, after the Gratification was become lawful, he cannot with any Appearance of Reason, be supposed to have indulged the same Passion where there was less Beauty to attract, and less Affection to urge, where it would have been attended with Guilt and Infamy, where the Motives were less, and the Obstacles more.

FROM the Death of *Stella*, his Life became much more retired, and the Austerity of his Temper naturally increased; he could not join in the social Cheerfulness of his publick Days, or bear such an Intrusion upon his own Melancholy, as the Cheerfulness of others; these Entertainments therefore were discontinued, and he sometimes avoided the Company of his most intimate Friends. But, when the lenient Hand of Time had allayed the Anguish of his Mind, he seems to have regretted the Effects of its first Violence, * and to wish for the Return of those whom his Impatience had banished. In the Year 1732, he complains in a Letter to Mr. Gay, that he had a large House, and should hardly find one Visitor, if he was not able to hire them with a Bottle of Wine. I generally, says he, dine alone, and, am thankful, if a Friend will pass the Evening with me. He complains also about the same Time, in a Letter to Mr. Pope, that he was in danger of dying poor and *friendless*, even his Female Friends having forsaken him; which, as he says, was what vexed him most. These Complaints were afterwards repeated in a Strain of yet greater Sensibility and Self-pity: All my Friends, says he, have forsaken me.

Vertiginosus, inops, surdus, male gratus amicis.

Deaf, Giddy, Helpless, left alone,
To all my Friends a Burden grown.

YET he confesses that, though he was less patient in Solitude, he was harder to be pleased with Company

pany*, so that even now perhaps his Behaviour did not much invite those whom before it had driven away.

His Complaint of being forsaken by his Female Friends, shews that at this Time his House was not a constant Seraglio of very virtuous Women, who attended him from Morning 'till Night, as some People have asserted; and, it seems to imply, that the Observer is also mistaken, when he says, that Females were rarely admitted into his House, and never came but upon very particular Invitations. The Absence of Persons whom he kept at such Distance, and so rarely admitted, could scarce be supposed to vex him most; nor is it easy to conceive in what Sense†, they could be said to forsake him, who never came, but upon particular Invitation. However, as to the Seraglio, the Observer affirms in the most solemn Manner, and from frequent Intercourse with the Dean, and long Intimacy with his most intimate Friends, that Lord Orrery was grossly misinformed, and that no such ever subsisted; Mrs. *Ridgeway*, Daughter of Mrs. *Brent*, his former Housekeeper, who came to live with him some Time after *Stella's* Death, being the only Female in his Family, except Servants.

As he lived much in Solitude, he frequently amused himself with Writing, as appears by the Dates of many of his Pieces which are subsequent to this Time; and, it is very remarkable, that although his Mind was certainly depressed, and his principal Enjoyment at an End, when Mrs. *Johnson* died, yet there is an Air of Trifling and Levity in some of the Pieces which he wrote afterwards, that is not to be found in any other; such in particular, are his Directions to Servants, and several of his Letters to Doctor *Sheridan*.

Z 3

As

* D. S. 309.

† J. R. 128, 129.

As he was undoubtedly much more tenderly and strictly connected with *Stella*, than with any other Woman, * so his Friendship seems to have been more intimate and unreserved with Dr. *Sheridan*, than with any other Man; his Letters to him are evidently the Effusions of his Heart, whether he was cheerful or sad, and seem to imply a perfect Acquaintance with every Peculiarity of his Circumstances.

Dr. *Sheridan* was a Clergyman of considerable Parts and great Learning; he had in particular, an extensive and critical Knowledge of the Language and History of the antient *Greeks* and *Romans*, which he taught with great Success in a Grammar School, of which he was Master; and it was remarked, that his Scholars brought to the University, not only much Learning, but good Morals. This Gentleman was by Nature suited to *Swift* as a Companion, in the highest Degree; he had a Vein of Humour that was a constant Occasion of Merriment, he had an Absence of Mind, which rendered him a perpetual Object of Raillery, and an indolent Good-nature, which made him unapt to take Offence; he was always disposed to be cheerful, and therefore readily concurred in the Entertainment of *Swift*'s Hours of Pleasantry; and could without much Pain or Displeasure, give way to his Petulance, or his Coldness, in his Paroxysms of Fretfulness and Reserve; he also greatly contributed to *Swift*'s Amusement, by little sprightly Pieces of the inferior Kind of Poetry, which he was always writing; and yet more to his Employment by Hints and Materials, which he was every Moment throwing out.

WITH

* See his Letters on *STELLA*'s Sickness, and from Sir ARTHUR ACHESON's, Vol. VII. p. 299.

WITH this easy, negligent, contented Creature, *Swift* passed much of his Time, as well during *Mrs. Johnson's* Life, as afterwards; and although, there is in general, an Air of Superiority in his Letters, and might be sometimes in his Behaviour, a Want of that Complacency which no Familiarity should exclude; yet it appears that the Dean did not hold *Sheridan* cheap. *Sheridan* he loved for his own Merit, and was content to have deserved his Love by the Interest of another; "*Stella*, says he, loved you well, and a great Share of the little Merit I have with you is owing to her Solicitations."

In the Year 1733, when an Attempt was made to repeal the Test Act in *Ireland*, the Dissenters often affected to call themselves * BROTHER PROTESTANTS and FELLOW CHRISTIANS, with the Members of the Established Church. Upon this Occasion the Dean wrote a short Copy of Verses, in which there is a Passage that so provoked one *B—sw—b*, a Lawyer, and Member of the ——— P———t, that he swore in the hearing of many Persons to revenge himself, either by murdering or maiming the Author. And, for this Purpose he engaged his Footmen with two Russians to secure the Dean, wherever he could be found. As soon as this Oath and Attempt of *Bettesworth* were known, all the principal Inhabitants of *St. Patrick's* waited upon the Dean † in Form, and presented a Paper subscribed with their Names, in which they solemnly engaged, in Behalf of themselves and the rest of the Liberty to defend his Person and Fortune, as the Friend and Benefactor of his Country.

SUCH was the Reverence and Affection, with which *Swift* was treated in his old Age, not by
Domestics

* See Vol. II. p. 379.

† See Vol. X. p. 230.

Domesticks or Dependants, whom the Hope of some future Advantage might induce to dissemble, but by Persons of Rank and Fortune, with whom he had no Connection, but as a Benefactor, to the Publick, and who, as they had nothing future to hope could be prompted only by Gratitude for the past, such Gratitude as was never yet excited but by Characters very different from actual Misanthropy or sordid Selfishness.

WHEN this Paper was delivered, *Swift* was in Bed, giddy and deaf, having been some Time before seized with one of his Fits; but he dictated an Answer, in which there is all the Dignity of habitual Pre-eminence, and all the Resignation of humble Piety; though he acknowledged the Kindness of his Friends, yet he declared his Trust to be in God; he bewailed his Incapacity to receive and thank them, as in Justice and Gratitude he ought; and concluded with a short but pathetic Prayer, for their Temporal and Eternal Happiness.

THESE Fits of Giddiness and Deafness, which were the Effects of his Surfeit, before he was twenty Years old, became more frequent and more violent, in Proportion as he grew into Years. And in 1736, while he was writing a Satire on the *Irish* Parliament, which he called the *Legion Club*, he was seized with one of these Fits, the Effect of which was so dreadful, that he left the Poem unfinished, and never afterwards attempted a Composition, either in Verse or Prose, that required a Course of Thinking, or perhaps more than one sitting to finish.

FROM this Time his Memory was perceived gradually to decline, and his Passions to pervert his Understanding; a Calamity to which many Particulars seem to have concurred.

HIS Solitude which has been already accounted for, prevented the Diversion of his Mind by Conversation, from brooding over his Disappointments, and aggravating every Injury that he had suffered, by all the Circumstances which is ingenious Resentment, if it does not find, is apt to create: A Resolution which he had taken, and to which he had obstinately adhered not to wear Spectacles, precluded the Entertainment which he might otherwise have found in Books, and his Giddiness, though it was a mere corporal Disorder, prevented the Employment of his Mind in Composition. In this Situation his Thoughts seem to have been confined to the Contemplation of his own Misery, which he felt to be great, and which in this World he knew to be hopeless; the Sense of his present Condition was necessarily complicated with Regret of the past, and with Resentment both against those by whom he had been banished, and those who had deserted him in his Exile. A fixed Attention to one Object long continued is known to destroy the Ballance of the Mind, and it is not therefore strange, that *Swift* should by Degrees become the Victim of outrageous Madness.

THAT he was weary of Life, appears by many Passages in his Letters and Expressions to his Friends. In 1739, three Years after his Memory first declined, he had been standing with a Clergyman* under a very large heavy Pier-glass, which, just as they moved to another Part of the Room, fell down and broke to Pieces; the Clergyman, struck with a Sense of the Danger from which they had escaped, turned to *Swift* and cried out, what a Mercy it is that we moved the Moment we did; for if we had not, we should certainly have been killed; the Dean replied, that as is to himself he was
sorry

* Dr. FRANCIS WILSON.

sorry* he had changed Ground, and wished the Glafs had fallen upon him.

UNTIL about the Time of this Accident, though his Memory was become very defective, and his Passions more violent, yet his Conversation was still sprightly and sensible, but mingled with more Satire, and that Satire was more bitter; he also continued to correspond by Letter with his Friends in *England*, particularly Mr. *Pope*, with whom he had contracted an early Friendship, which continued until his Death*. It hath been said that towards the End of their Lives it grew cold, but the Dean in a Letter to Lord *Orrery*, which he wrote a short Time before his Incapacity, says, "when you see my dear Friend *Pope*, tell him I will answer his Letter soon: I love him above all the rest of Mankind." He has also called Mr. *Pope* his dearest Friend in his Will, and Mr. *Pope* in a Letter which was written about the same Time, makes this Request: "Assure him (the Dean) the World has nothing in it I admire so much; nothing the Loss of which I should regret so much as his Genius and his Virtues."

IN the Beginning of the Year 1741, his Understanding was so much impaired, and his Memory so much failed, that he was utterly incapable of Conversation. Strangers were not permitted to approach him, and his Friends found it necessary to have Guardians appointed to take proper Care of his Person and Estate†. Early in the Year 1742, his Reason was wholly subverted, and became absolute Lunacy. The last Person whom he knew was Mrs. *Whiteway*‡, and the
Sight

* Mr. POPE dyed in May, 1744.

† *Orrery*, p. 98. 126. ‡ *Orrery*, p. 94. 106.

Sight of her, when he knew her no more, threw him into Fits of Rage so violent and dreadful, that she was forced to leave him, and the only Act of Kindness that remained in her Power was to call once or twice a Week at the Deanry, enquire after his Health, and see that proper Care was taken of him; sometimes she would steal a Look at him when his Back was towards her, but did not dare to venture into his Sight. He would neither eat nor drink while the Servant who brought him his Provisions stayed in the Room; his Meat, which was served up ready cut, he would sometimes suffer to stand an Hour on the Table before he would touch it, and at last he would eat it walking; for, during this deplorable State of his Mind, it was his constant Custom to walk ten Hours a Day.

IN *October* 1742, after this Frensy had continued several Months, his left Eye swelled to the Size of an Egg, and the Lid appeared to be so much inflamed and discoloured, that the Surgeon expected it to mortify; several large Boils also broke out on his Arms and his Body. The extreme Pain of this Tumour kept him waking near a Month, and during one Week it was with Difficulty that five Persons kept him by mere Force from tearing out his own Eyes.

It has been observed, that corporal Pain, whether by forcing the Mind from that Object which has engrossed it, or by whatever Means, hath restored Lunatics to the Use of Reason, and this Effect, in a great Degree, it produced upon the Dean; for just before the Tumour perfectly subsided, and the Pain left him, he knew Mrs. *White way*, took her by the Hand, and spoke to her with his former Kindness; that Day, and the following, he knew his Physician and Surgeon*, and all his Family,

* *Dr. GRATTAN, and JOHN NICHOLS, Esq; Surgeon-General.*

Family, and appeared to have so far recovered his Understanding and Temper, that the Surgeon was not without Hopes he might once more enjoy Society and be amused by the Company of his old Friends. This Hope, however, was but of a short Duration; for a few Days afterwards he sunk into a State of total Insensibility, slept much, and could not without great Difficulty be prevailed upon to walk a cross the Room. This was the Effect of another bodily Disease, his Brain being loaded with Water. Mr. *David Stevens*, an ingenious Clergyman of *Delalossory* in the Diocese of *Dublin*, pronounced this to be the Case during his Illness, and upon opening his Head*, it appeared that he was not mistaken†, but, though he often entreated the the Dean's Friends and Physicians that his Skull might be trepanned and the Water discharged, no Regard was paid to his Opinion, or his Entreaty‡.

AFTER the Dean had continued silent a whole Year, in this State of helpless Idiocy, his House-keeper went into his Room on the 30th of *November*, in the Morning, and told him that it was his Birth-Day, and that Bonfires and Illuminations were preparing to celebrate it as usual; to this he immediately replied, 'It is all a Folly, they had better let it alone.'

SOME other Instances of short Intervals of Sensibility and Reason, after his Madness had ended in Stupor, seemed to prove that his Disorder, whatever it was, had not destroyed, but only suspended, the Powers of his Mind.

HE was sometimes visited by Mr. *Deane Swift*, a Relation; and about *Christmas* 1743, he seemed desirous to speak to him. Mr. *Swift* then told him he

* *Orrery*, p. 94, 95, 96, 97, 98. † *J. R.* 149.

‡ When the Dean was dead, Mr. *WHITEWAY*, an eminent Surgeon, nearly related him, opened to the Skull, and found much Water in the Brain.

he came to dine with him, on which Mrs. *Ridgeway*, the House-keeper, immediately said, 'Won't you give Mr. *Swift* a Glass of Wine, Sir? To this he made no Answer, but shewed that he understood the Question, by shrugging up his Shoulders, as he had been used to do, when he had a Mind a Friend should spend the Evening with him, and which, in his ironical Manner, was as much as to say, you will ruin me in Wine. Soon after he again endeavoured with a good deal of Pain to find Words, but at last after many Efforts, not being able, he fetched a deep Sigh, and was afterwards silent. A few Months afterwards, upon his House-keeper's removing a Knife, as he was going to catch at it, he shrugged up his Shoulders, and said, "I am what I am, I am what I am," and in about six Minutes repeated the same Words two or three Times.

IN the Year 1744, he now and then called his Servant by his Name, and once attempting to speak to him, but not being able to express his Meaning, he shewed Signs of much Uneasiness, and at last said, 'I am a Fool.' Once afterwards as his Servant was taking away his Watch, he said, 'bring it here:' and when the Servant was breaking a large hard Coal, he said, 'That is a Stone, you Blockhead.'

FROM this Time he was perfectly silent, until the 28th of *October*, 1745, and then died in very great Agony, having been in strong Convulsion Fits, for thirty-six Hours before, in the 78th Year of his Age.

BY his Will, which is dated in *May* 1740, just before he ceased to be a reasonable Being, he left about 1200*l.* in specifick Legacies*, and the rest of his Fortune, which amounted to about 11 50*l.* to erect and endow and Hospital for Idiots and Naticks.

VOL. XI.

A a

HE

* See his Will. p. 283.

HE was buried in the Great Isle of St. *Patrick's* Cathedral, under a Stone of black Marble, inscribed with an Epitaph in *Latin*, written by himself

FROM this Narrative of his Life and from his Works, the striking Peculiarities of his Character may be easily collected; but there are some Incidents which relate to his Conversation, and some which respect his Person, and private Oeconomy, which should by no Means be omitted.

IN Company he neither wrapped himself up in his own Importance, without deigning to communicate his Knowledge, or exert his Wit; nor did he engross the Conversation by perpetual and overbearing Loquacity*. His Rule was never to speak more than a Minute at a Time, and then to wait, at least as long for others to take up the Conversation, after which he had a Right to speak again. His colloquial Stile, like that of his Writings, was clear, forceable, and concise. He greatly excelled in Punning, a Talent, which he said, no Man affected to dispise, but those that were without it; and his Conversation would have furnished a more excellent Compendium of this Species of Wit, than was ever yet compiled, or perhaps ever will; some of these Sallies of his Imagination are still remembered, and among others, the following, which may serve for Examples.

HE happened to be at the Castle in the Lieutenancy of the Earl of *Pembroke*, when a learned Physician was haranguing his Excellency upon the Nature and Qualities of Bees, which he was perpetually calling a Nation and Commonwealth:

‘Yes, my Lord says *Swift*, they are a Nation,
‘and

* Dean Swift, 366. J. R. 203.

‘ and of great Antiquity ; you know, my Lord ;
 ‘ *Moses* takes Notice of them ; he numbers the
 ‘ *Hivites* among the Nations which *Joshua* was
 appointed to conquer.

He was another Time in Company with a Lady,
 whose long Train happened to sweep down a fine
 Fiddle, and break it, upon which he immediately
 cried out,

Mantua vae miserae nimium vicina Cremona.

BUT, his Conversation abounded with Turns of
 Wit of an higher Kind ; being one Day at a She-
 riff’s Feast, who after several other Toasts had been
 drank, called out to him, *Mr. Dean, The Trade of*
Ireland *. The Dean turned about, and immedi-
 ately answered, *Sir, I drink no Memories* †.

He greatly admired the Talents of *Philip* the
 late Duke of *Wharton* ‡, and hearing him, one Day,
 recount many of his Frolicks ||, ‘ Aye, my Lord,
 ‘ said he, you have had many Frolicks, but let me
 ‘ recommend one more to you, take a Frolick to be
 ‘ virtuous, I assure you, it will do you more Ho-
 ‘ nour than all the rest.’

THE Dean also greatly excelled in telling a Sto-
 ry ; and, although in the latter Part of his Life he

A a 2

was

* *J. R. 216.*

† *Dr. BROWN, Bishop of Cork, had just then print-
 ed Pamphlets, and preached several Sermons, in which
 drinking to Memories was zealously condemned.*

‡ *See the Note in the Connoisseur, or in the History
 of the Peace of Utrecht.*

|| *J. R. 216.*

was very apt to tell his Stories too often* yet his Wit, as well as his Virtue, was always superior to the wretched Expedients of those despicable Babblers, who are perpetually attempting to put off the double Entendre and Profaneness for Wit and Humour. His Conversation was in the highest Degree chaste, and wholly free from the least Tincture of Irreligion.

As he was zealous to preserve all the Delicacies of Conversation, he was best pleased when some of the Company were Ladies; and, in one of his Letters to Lord *Oxford*, he says, ' Since Women have been left out of all our Meetings, except Parties of Play, or where worse Designs are carried on, our Conversation hath very much degenerated.' And in this Instance†, his Example is a Reproof to those Pedants, who suppose that Women are never in their proper Sphere, but in the Dressing-Room or the Nursery.

If the Conversation turned upon serious Subjects‡, he was neither petulant in the Debate, nor negligent of the Issue; he would listen with great Attention to the Arguments of others, and whether he was, or was not engaged as a Disputant himself, he would recapitulate what had been said, state the Question with great Clearness and Precision, point out the controverted Particular, and appeal to the Opinion either of some neutral Person, or of the Majority.

It is however true, that he kept his Friends in some Degree of Awe, and yet he was more open to Admonition than Flattery, if it was offered without Arrogance§, and by Persons of whose Ability and Honesty he had no Doubt. In his Poem
of

* *J. R.* 218.

† Dean Swift, 366.

‡ Dean Swift, 368.

§ *J. R.* 19.

of *Baucis* and *Philemon*, which does not consist of quite two hundred Verses, Mr. *Addison* made him blot out fourscore, add fourscore, and alter fourscore. It was customary with his Friends to make him some little annual Present, on his Birth-Day, something according to his own Definition of a Present, which was of no great Value, but which could not be bought; and, Dr. *Delany*, soon after he was admitted to some Degree of Intimacy, sent him, with such a Memorial of his Esteem, some Verses, in which he upbraids him, though with great Delicacy, for misapplying his Talents, and admonishes him to turn the Force of Ridicule, of which he was so great a Master, upon those who had laboured to employ it against the sacred Doctrines of Christianity. The Dean as he had suffered *Addison's* Correction with Approbation, received this Admonition with Kindness; he sighed, and said, with great Appearances of Regret, that it was too late, and from that Day took all Occasions to distinguish *Delany* by the Name of Friend.

He had indeed no Skill in Musick, and so was not able to entertain his Company with a Song, to which some Men of great Dignity and great Parts have condescended; but his Power of Ridicule extended even to Musick, of which he gave an Instance too singular to be forgotten.

Dr. *Pratt*, who was then Provost of the University of *Dublin*, had acquired much of the *Italian* Taste for Musick in his Travels, and *Tom Rossengrave*, a celebrated Performer, being just returned from *Italy*, played a Voluntary at St. *Patrick's* Cathedral, where Dr. *Pratt* heard him, and *Swift* was also present: The Dr. happened to dine at the Deanry the same Day, and was so extravagant in his Encomiums on *Rossengrave's* Voluntary, that several of the Company said, they wished they had heard it:

Do you, said *Swift*, then you shall hear it still, and immediately he sung out so lively, and yet so ridiculous an Imitation of it, that all the Company were kept in continual Laughter until it was over, except one old Gentleman, who sat with great Composure; and, though he listened, yet shewed neither Curiosity nor Approbation. After the Entertainment he was asked by some of the Company, how it happened that he had been no more affected by the Musick? To which he answered with great Gravity, that he had heard *Mr. Rossen-grave* himself play it before.

SUCH was *Swift* as a Companion; as a Master, he was not less remarkable or meritorious.

As he expected punctual, ready, and implicit Obedience, he always tried his Servants when he hired them, by some Test of their Humility. Among other Questions he always asked, whether they understood cleaning Shoes, because, said he, my Kitchen-Wench hath a Scullion that does her Drudgery, and one Part of the Business of my Groom and Footman is constantly to clean her Shoes by Turns: If they scrupled this, the Treaty was at an End; if not, he gave them a farther Hearing.

HIS Kitchen Wench however was his Cook, a Woman, of a large Size, robust Constitution, and coarse Features, whose Face was very much seamed with the Small-Pox, and furrowed by Age; this Woman he always distinguished by the Name of Sweet-heart.

IT happened one Day that *Sweet-heart* greatly over-roasted the only Joint he had for Dinner, upon which he sent for her up, and with great Coolness and Gravity, *Sweet-heart*, says he, take this down into the Kitchen and do it less. She replied, that was impossible. Pray then, said he, if you had

had roasted it too little, could you have done it more? Yes, she said, she could easily have done that; why then, *Sweet-heart*, replied the Dean, let me advise you, if you must commit a Fault, commit a Fault that than be mended.

To the rest of the Servants, indeed he appeared to be churlish and austere, but, in reality, was one of the best Masters in the World: He allowed them Board-Wages at the highest Rate then known; and, if he employed them about any Thing out of the ordinary Course of their Service, he always paid them to the full Value of their Work, as he would have paid another: With these Emoluments, and the Fragments from his Table, he expected they should find themselves in Victuals, and all other Necessaries, except the Liveries which he gave them; if, in this Situation their Expences were greater than their Income, it was judged a sufficient Reason to discharge them; but, on the contrary, as soon as they had saved a full Year's Wages, he constantly paid them legal Interest for it, and took great Pleasure in seeing it accumulated to a Sum, which might settle them in some Employment if he should die, or, if they found it adviseable to quit his Service, which seldom happened, and he with whom his Servants live long, has indubitable Witnesses that he is a good Master.

It is also certain, that notwithstanding the apparent Austerity of his Temper, he did not consider his Servants as poor Slaves*, to whose Service he had a Right in Consideration merely of his Money, and owed them no reciprocal Obligation.

He had a Servant, whom he used to call *Saunders*, that lived long with him, and at length fell sick and died. In his Sickness, which lasted many Months,

* *Errery*, 200.

Months, *Swift* took Care that all possible Relief and Assistance should be afforded him, and when he died, he buried him in the South Isle of his Cathedral, and erected a small Piece of Statuary to his Memory, with this Inscription :

Here lieth the Body of
Alexander Magee, Servant to Dr. *Swift*,
Dean of St. *Patrick's*.

His grateful Master caused this Monument to be erected in Memory of his Discretion, Fidelity, and Diligence in that humble Station.

Ob. Mar. 24, 1721, Ætat. 29.

In the original Copy, which the Author of the *Observations* saw in the Dean's own Hand, the Expression was still stronger, and more to the Dean's Honour, thus :

His grateful Friend and Master.

But a Person of the Dean's Acquaintance, who is much more distinguished for Vanity than Wisdom, prevailed upon him to leave out Friend, even in Opposition to his well-known Maxim, that a faithful Servant should always be considered not as a poor Slave, but an humble Friend. Of this Person the Name is not told, but to conceal it is rather Injustice than Mercy, for he ought, on this Occasion, to inherit a Disgrace, at least proportionate to the Honour which he found Means to with-hold from *Swift*.

As a Member of civil Society, he was a zealous Advocate for Liberty, the Detector of Fraud, and the Scourge of Oppression. In his private Capacity, he was not only charitable, but generous; and whatever Misanthropy may be found in his Writings,

things, there doth not appear to have been any in his Life.

HIS Writings in Defence of the poor infatuated People of *Ireland*, are well known; and that he might not be wanting himself, while he pleaded their Cause with others, he constantly lent out a large Sum of Money, in small Portions to honest, diligent, and necessitous Tradesmen, who paid it with a small Gratuity by Way of Interest to the Person who kept the Account of the Disbursements and weekly Payments, for he received back these Loans, by a certain Sum, out of the weekly Profit of the Borrower's Trade*, in such Proportions, as that the whole should be repaid in a Year.

BESIDES this, he frequently gave away five and ten Pound, when proper Objects offered, without any Parade. He was indeed diligent to relieve the Poor, and at the same Time to encourage Industry, even in the lowest Station, and used regularly to visit a great Number of Poor, chiefly Women, as well in the publick Streets as Bye-Allies, and under the Arches of *Dublin*: Some of these sold Plumbs, some Hobnails, others Tape, and others Gingerbread; some knitted, and some darned Stockings, and others cobbled Shoes; these Women were most of them old, deformed, or crippled, and some were all three. He saluted them with great Kindness, asked how they throve, and what Stock they had? If the Ware of any of them was such as he could possibly use, he bought some, and paid for every Halfpenny worth Sixpence; if not, he always added something to their Stock†, and strictly charged them to be industrious, honest, and clean.

It must be confessed that these Acts of Bounty, did not appear to be the Effects of Compassion,
for

* *J. R.* 203, 304.

† *J. R.* 132, 133.

for of the soft Sympathy of Distress, that sometimes sparkles in the Eye, and sometimes glows upon the Cheek, he shewed no Sign, and he may therefore be supposed to have wanted it; however, it is certain, that he was wholly free from ill Nature; for a Man can have no Complacency in that Evil which he is continually busy to remove.

HIS Bounty had not indeed the indiscriminating Ardour of blind Instinct; and if it had, it would not have been the Instrument of equal Happiness: To feed Idleness is to propagate Misery, and discourage Virtue, but to insure the Reward of Industry, is to bestow a Benefit at once upon the Individual, and the Publick; it is to preserve from Despair, those who struggle with Difficulty and Disappointment; it is to supply Food and Rest to that Labour, which alone can make Food tasteful, and Rest sweet, and to invigorate the Community, by the full Use of those Members, which would otherwise become not only useless, but hurtful, as a Limb in which the vital Fluid ceaseth to circulate, will not only wither, but corrupt. In this View, then the Bounty of *Swift* was like every other Christian Duty, a reasonable Service; and that he felt no secret Pleasure in the Calamities of others, may be fairly concluded, not only from his general Practice, but from many particular Facts, in which he appears to have been watchful and zealous to alleviate Distress by unsolicited and unexpected Liberality.

It happened that a young Gentleman* of his Choir, being Abroad with his Gun, suffered irreparable Hurt, by its going off accidentally, and breaking his Thumb which was cut off. When the

* Mr. JAMES BAYLIS, afterwards Parish-Clerk of St. Mary's, Dublin.

the Dean heard of it, he expressed great Concern, and having paused a little, Well, said he, this will be a good Time to reward Merit, and alleviate Distress; I will make him a Vicar, which he did accordingly the same Hour.

THERE are some Infirmities to which the Mind as well as the Body, naturally becometh subject in the Decline of Life. The Desire of accumulating Wealth, almost always encreaseth in Proportion, as it becomes more absurd; and those are most tenacious of Money, to whom Money can be of least Use. It hath been generally said, that this Weakness is the Effect of long Acquaintance with Mankind, who are found to deserve less Confidence and less Kindness, as they are more known; and indeed, though this Opinion should not hastily be admitted, it must yet be confessed, that the first Article in which Men lessen their Expences, is generally the Money they have been used to give away, and that they gradually lose the Inclination to do good, as they acquire the Power. But *Swift*, if he was not exempt from the Infirmary, was yet clear of the Vice. If his Oeconomy degenerated into Avarice, it must be confessed, that his Avarice did not contract his Bounty, and he suffers no Degradation in his moral Character, who, when the Practice of any Virtue is become more difficult, is yet able to exert it in the same Degree.

Swift turned all the Evil of excessive Frugality upon himself. It induced him to walk, when he had been used to ride, and he would then say, he had earned a Shilling or Eighteen Pence, which he had a Right to do what he pleased with, and which he constantly applied to his usual Charities, which by this Expedient he could continue, and yet expend less, upon the whole than before; but, the Distribution, even of this Charity, was marked
with

with the Peculiarity of his Character, for that he might proportion his Bounty to the Necessities and the Merit of various Objects, and yet give but one Piece of Money at a Time, he constantly kept different Pockets full of all Sorts of Coin, from a Silver Three-pence to a Crown-piece *.

BUT, as his Desire of immediate Gain, was not gratified at the Expence of the Poor, to whose Distress he was a Witness, neither was it gratified at the Expence of those whom it was impossible he should know, though he had many Opportunities of doing it.

HE once resolved never to renew a certain Lease belonging to the Deanry, without raising the Rent, thirty Pounds a Year. The Tenant had often solicited him, instead of raising the Rent, to take a larger Fine; and this Man, a very short Time before the Dean lost his Memory, urged him with a very large Sum, supposing that as raising the Rent could only enrich the Dean's Successor, and a large Fine would come into his own Coffer, he should certainly succeed. The Dean, however, maintained his Integrity, refused the Offer with Indignation, and fulfilled his Purpose of raising the Rent. Although at this Time his Memory was so bad that the next Day he did not remember what he had done †.

As an Ecclesiastic, he was scrupulously exact in the Exercise of his Function, as well with Regard to spiritual, as temporal Things. As to his Cathedral, he expended more Money to support and adorn it, than had been applied to the same Use, in any Period since it was built. He was extremely conscientious, in promoting the Members of his Choir according to their Merit, and never advanced any Person to a Vicarage, who was not qualified in all Respects, and in the highest Degree, whatever

their

* See CLANCY's *Memoirs*.

† J. R. 208.

their Interest, or however recommended; and he once refused a Vicarage to a Person for whom the Lady Carteret was very importunate, although he declared to her Ladyship, that if it had been in his Power to have made the Gentleman a Dean, or a Bishop, he would have obliged her willingly, because he said Deaneries and Bishopricks were Preferments, in which Merit had no Concern*, the Merit of his Vicars would be brought to the Test every Day. Nor would he suffer one Shilling of the Cathedral Money to be alienated from its proper Use, even for the Purpose of Charity: When any Person solicited such an Alienation, he used to tell them, that this Money was appropriated; but, says he, as you declare the Person to be relieved, is an Object of Christian Charity, I will give out of my private Purse, any Sum proportioned to my Revenue, if you will contribute a Sum in the same Proportion to yours; my Deanry is worth seven hundred Pounds, your Income is two; if you will give two Shillings I will give seven, or any larger Sum after the same Rate.

As to the Poor in the Liberty of his own Cathedral, they were better regulated than any other in the Kingdom; they were all badged, and were never found begging out of their District; for these he built and furnished a little Alms-house, being assisted by some voluntary Contributions†, and preserved among them uncommon Cleanliness and Decency, by constantly visiting them in Person.

It hath already been remarked, that, although he did not himself understand Music, yet he always attended at the Performance of the Anthem, that the Choir might do their Duty; but he had

B b

another

[* J. R. 192.

† J. R. 8.

another Practice yet more singular, and more useful, as soon as the Preacher mounted the Pulpit, he pulled out a Pencil, and Piece of Paper, and carefully noted whatever was wrong, both in the Expressions, and the Manner in which they were delivered, whether they were too scholastick, to be generally understood, and so coarse and vulgar, as to lose their Dignity; and he never failed to make these the Subject of an Admonition to the Preacher as soon as he came into the Chapter-House.

HE improved even his Living of *Laracor*, although he continued there but a short Time, and and left both the House and Glebe, a convenient and agreeable Retreat to his Successor at a considerable Expence, for which he knew no Return would be made to his Executors; and he determined to assert his Right of Absence against the Archbishop* of *Dublin*, at the Expence of several hundred Pounds, at a Time that he did not believe he should evermore claim the Privilege for himself, because he would not endanger the Liberty of his Successor, by an injurious Precedent.

THERE is no Act of Virtue, which Men have so often substituted for the peculiar positive Duties of Christians, as Liberality to the Poor, nor any by which they have so often hoped to atone for the Breach of every other moral Obligation.

BUT the Dean, although he abounded in Charity, was not less diligent in the Practice of other Virtues or less devout and constant in the Solemnities of Religion. He was remarkably temperate, both in Eating and Drinking; he was not only just, but punctual in his Dealings, and he had an inviolable Regard for Truth. As he constantly attended divine Worship, when he was at Home,

* Dr. KING. See his Letter, Vol. VIII.

so he used always to go early to Church, when he was in *London*, and never to sleep without assembling his Family, in his own Chamber to Prayers.

It has often been remarked, that Virtue in Excess becomes vicious, and not only precludes the Reward of the Possessor, but produceth rather Mischief than Good to others. An Abhorrence of Hypocrisy, was a striking Particular in *Swift's* Characters, but it is difficult to determine, whether it was more a Virtue than a Vice, for it brought upon him the Charge of Irreligion, and encouraged others to be irreligious. In Proportion as he abhorred Hypocrisy, he dreaded the Imputation of it, and therefore concealed his Piety, with as much Diligence as others conceal those Vices, which Custom hath not made reputable. His constant Attendance at Church, when he was at the Deanry, he knew would be considered as the Duty of his Station; but whatever had the Appearance of voluntary Devotion, he always took Care to hide; when he went to Church in *London*, it was early in the Morning; so that, although he was constantly at Prayers, and at the Sacrament, yet he appeared to neglect both, as he was at Home when others were at Church; and when he went to Prayers in his Family, the Servants assembled at the appointed Hour, as it were by Stealth, without any Notice from a Bell, or any other Call, except the Striking of the Clock; so that Dr. *Delany* was six Months in his Family, before he suspected him of this unfashionable Practice. The same Principle, upon which he thus studiously avoided Appearances of Good, made him frequently incur Appearances of Evil, especially when an Opportunity offered, of indulging his peculiar Vein of Humour, and gratifying his natural Disposition. One Instance of this hath already been

given, in his solemn Address to his Clerk from the Desk, by the Name of *Roger*, but there are others, which are less excusable. Soon after he was made Dean of *St. Patrick's*, he had dined one Sunday with *Dr. Raymond*, Vicar of *Trim*, and when the Bell had rung, and the People were assembled to Evening Prayers at the Church, which was not distant more than two hundred Yards; *Raymond*, said he, I will lay you a Crown, that I begin Prayers before you this Afternoon; *Dr. Raymond* accepted the Wager, and immediately both ran as fast as they could, towards the Church. *Raymond* who was much nimbler than *Swift*, arrived first at the Door, and when he entered the Church, walked decently toward the reading Desk; *Swift*, never slackened his Pace, but, running up the Isle, left *Dr. Raymond* behind him, in the middle of it, and, stepping into the Desk, without putting on a Surplice or opening the Book, began the Service in an audible Voice, and thus won his Wager*.

It has been common among Pretenders to Wit, to affect great Contempt for every Kind of Regularity,

* One Sunday being at Donnybrook Church near Dublin, *Dr. Whittingham*, Archdeacon of the Diocese, not coming in Time, the Dean went into the Church, put on a Surplice, began the Service, and was reading the first Lesson when the Archdeacon entered, and, when he came into the Desk, the Dean took off the Surplice, gave it to him, and desired him to go on, shewing him the last Verse he had read, which he was obliged to comply with. This astonished the Congregation, but particularly the Archdeacon, who asked the Dean the Cause of such Behaviour? To which he answered, You should not keep so many People waiting for you, some of whom perhaps bath several Miles to ride to Dinner, which may be spoiled by your Delay.

larity, to live, or pretend to live, in a continual Dissipation, without Regard to the Return of those Seasons, which have been generally allotted to particular Purposes, without sleeping or waking, or eating or drinking, like the rest of Mankind. To recover these unhappy Wretches from a Condition so deplorable, as to suppress Indignation, and yet so contemptible, as scarce to excite Pity, it is here recorded that the Life of *Swift*, was in the highest Degree Uniform and Regular, his Hours of Walking and Reading, of Exercise and Amusement, never varied; and that he might keep the Revolution of his Employments with greater Exactness, his Watch was almost constantly either in his Hand, or on the Table before him.

As his Abhorrence of Hypocrisy, exempted him from Affectation, the natural Equity of his Mind secured him against Envy; Envy seems to be a Desire of Equality gratified by degrading others, as Emulation is a Desire of Equality gratified by advancing ourselves. It does not appear, that *Swift*, upon a Supposition, that he had no Superior, was without Emulation, but by his ready Assistance, to advance the Reputation and Circumstances of others, he appears to have been free from Envy.

He cultivated Genius wherever he found it, and in whatever Degree, with great Zeal and Assiduity, and would cheerfully spend much Time in correcting and improving any literary Composition, that had the least Appearance of Ingenuity; nor was this Kindness confined to those whose Parts could never come in Competition with his own. He started many Hints to Mr. *Gay*, which he pursued with great Success; and he recommended *Congreve*, *Addison*, *Parnel*, and many others, to

those whose Favour was most likely to render them conspicuous.

AMONG his Singularities were his Resolution never to wear Spectacles, and his obstinate Perseverance in the Use of too much Exercise. His want of Spectacles made it difficult to read, and his immoderate Exercise wasted his Flesh, and produced a Poorness in his Blood, as he was often told by his Friends and Physicians, Dr. *Helfham* and Dr. *Grattan*, and as afterwards appeared by Experiment; for when he was reduced to a State of Idiotism, and ceased from Walking, he recovered his Flesh in a short Time.

HE was cleanly even to Superstition, his Nails were always pared to the Quick to prevent the least gathering of Dirt under them, and he never dressed without a Bason of Water by him, with which he carefully cleansed his Feet. In his Person he was robust and masculine, his Deportment was commanding, and his Walk erect. His Voice was sharp and high toned, especially when he read Prayers, but not Effeminate*, and there was a natural Severity in his Aspect, which even his Smiles could scarce soften, or his utmost Gaiety relax.

HIS Manner was without Ceremony, but not Rustic; for he had a perfect Knowledge of all the Modes and Variations of Politeness and Complaisance which he practised in a Man peculiar to himself†; and the Respect that was due to him by these Rules, he took Care to exact without the least Abatement.

IT will readily be admitted, that every Man hath some Appetite, Affection, or Disposition, which either in Kind or Degree, is irregular, and which it is the Province of Reason to order and restrain.

* Orrery, 72.

† D. S. 360, 365.

strain. As it will always happen, that in some Instances, Passion will predominate, as Reason will in others; it follows, that there must be some Dissimilitude in every Character, from which *Swift's* could not therefore be exempt; but upon the Whole, it will be found uncommonly steady and uniform, although some to screen their own scattered and inconsistent Representations of it from Censure, have pretended that it was capricious, various, and contradictory.

Swift appears to have been naturally Temperate and Chaste, it was therefore easy for him to be frugal; but he was also naturally high spirited, and therefore, as Wealth is the Pledge of Independance; it is not strange, his Frugality should verge towards Excess. However, as he acted upon Principles, not only of general Virtue, but of the noblest moral System of Christianity, he did not deliver himself up to natural Propensities, when they were contrary to his Duty, and therefore his Love of Money did not contract his Charity to the Poor, or defraud his Successors, to enrich himself. The same Spirit which secured his Integrity by disdain- ing the Meanness of a Lye, produced that Dread of Hypocrisy, which concealed his Piety, and betrayed him into Appearances of Evil; and the same Want of natural Tenderness, which made him obdurate and austere, transferred the Distribution of his Liberty from Instinct to Religion, and made that, which in others is an Exercise of Self-love in him, an Act of Obedience to God.

SUCH was Dr. *Jonathan Swift*, whose Writings either stimulate Mankind, to sustain their Dignity, as rational and moral Beings, by shewing how low they stand in mere animal Nature, or fright them from Indecency, by holding up its native Deformity: And whose Life, with all the Advantages of
Genius

Genius and Learning, was a Scale of Infelicity, gradually ascending, until Pain and Anguish destroyed the Faculties, by which they were felt; while he was viewed at a Distance with Envy, he became a Burden to himself; he was forsaken by his Friends, and his Memory hath been loaded with unmerited Reproach: His Life therefore does not afford less Instruction, than his Writings, since to the Wise it may teach Humility, and to the Simple Content.



A LETTER from the Reverend Dr. SWIFT,
D. S. P. D. to Mr. FAULKNER:

SIR,

I Desire you will print the following Paper, in what Manner you think most proper. You see my Design in it: I believe, no Man had ever more Difficulty, or less Encouragement to bestow his whole Fortune for a Charitable Use.

I am, your humble Servant,

J. SWIFT.

Thur/day, July
13th, 1738.

IT is known enough, that the above named Doctor hath by his last Will and Testament, bequeathed his whole Fortune (excepting some Legacies) to build and endow an Hospital, in, or near this City, for the Support of Lunaticks, Ideots, and those they call Incurables: But, the Difficulty he lies under, is, that his whole Fortune consists in Mortgages on Lands, and other the like Securities. For, as to purchasing a real Estate in Lands, for want of active Friends, he finds it impossible; so, that much against his Will, if he should call in all his Money lent, he knows not where

where to find a convenient Estate in a tolerable Part of the Kingdom, which can be bought ; and, in the mean Time, his whole Fortune must lie dead in the Hands of Bankers. The great Misfortune is, that there seems not so much publick Virtue left among us, as to have any Regard for a charitable Design ; because none but the aforesaid unfortunate Objects of Charity, will be the better for it ; however, the said Doctor, by calling in the several Sums he hath lent, can be able with some Difficulty, to purchase 300*l. per Annum*, in Lands, for the Endowment of the said Hospital, if those Lands could be now purchased : Otherwise, he must leave it as he hath done in his Will, to the Care of his Executors, who are very honest, wise, and considerable Gentlemen, his Friends ; and yet, he hath known some very fair, and of deserved Credit, prove very negligent Trustees. The Doctor is now able to lend 2000*l. at 5 per Cent.* upon good Security ; of which the Principal, after his Decease, is to be disposed of by his Executors, in buying Land for the further Endowment of the said Hospital.





DR. SWIFT'S WILL.

IN the Name of GOD, *Amen*. I JONATHAN SWIFT, Doctor in Divinity, and Dean of the Cathedral Church of St. *Patrick, Dublin*, being at this Present of sound Mind, although weak in Body, do here make my last Will and Testament, hereby revoking all my former Wills.

Imprimis. I bequeath my Soul to GOD, (in humble Hopes of his Mercy through *Jesus Christ*) and my Body to the Earth. And, I desire that my Body may be buried in the great Isle of the said Cathedral, on the South Side, under the Pillar next to the Monument of Primate *Narcissus Marsh*, three Days after my Decease, as privately as possible, and at Twelve o'Clock at Night: And, that a black Marble of

Feet square, and seven Feet from the Ground, fixed to the Wall, may be erected, with the following Inscription in large Letters, deeply cut, and strongly gilded. HIC DEPOSITUM EST CORPUS JONATHAN SWIFT, S. T. D. HUIUS ECCLESIAE CATHEDRALIS DECANI, UBI SÆVA INDIGNATIO ULTERIUS COR LACERARE NEQUIT. ABI VIATOR, ET IMITARE, SI POTERIS, STRENUUM PRO VIRILI LIBERTATIS VINDICATOREM. OBIIT ANNO (1745) MENSIS (OCTOBRIS) DIE (19) ÆTATIS ANNO (78).

Item: I give and bequeath to my Executors, all my worldly Substance, of what Nature or Kind
soever

soever (excepting such Part thereof as is herein after particularly devised) for the following Uses and Purposes, that is to say, to the Intent that they, or the Survivors or Survivor of them, his Executors, or Administrators, as soon as conveniently may be after my Death, shall turn it all into ready Money, and lay out the same in purchasing Lands * of Inheritance in Fee-Simple, situate in any Province of Ireland, except Connaught, but as near to the City of Dublin, as conveniently can be found, and not incumbered with, or subject to any Leases for Lives renewable, or any Terms for Years longer than Thirty-one: And I desire that a yearly Annuity of Twenty Pounds Sterling, out of the annual Profits of such Lands, when purchased, and out of the yearly Income of my said Fortune, devised to my Executors, as aforesaid, until such Purchase shall be made, shall be paid to *Rebecca Dingley* of the City of Dublin, Spinster, during her Life, by two equal half-yearly Payments, on the Feasts of *All Saints*, and *St. Philip* and *St. Jacob*, the first Payment to be made on such of the said Feasts as shall happen next after my Death. And that the Residue of the yearly Profits of the said Lands, when purchased, and until such Purchase be made, the Residue of the yearly Income and Interest of my said Fortune devised as aforesaid, to my Executors, shall be laid out in purchasing a Piece of Land, situate near *Dr. Steevens's* † Hospital, or if it cannot be there had, somewhere

* *The Executors and Trustees purchased the Estate of ——— DENN, of Saggard, Esq; within seven Miles of Dublin.*

† *The Trustees of Dr. STEVEN's, let a Piece of Ground near their Hospital, at a small Rent, to build St. PATRICK's Hospital, on which a fine Building is erected, and Patients taken in.*

Dr. SWIFT's WILL.

285

where in or near the City of *Dublin*, large enough for the Purposes herein after mentioned, and in building thereon an Hospital large enough for the Reception of as many Idiots and Lunaticks as the annual Income of the said Lands and worldly Substance shall be sufficient to maintain : And, I desire that the said Hospital may be called *St. Patrick's Hospital*, and may be built in such a Manner, that another Building may be added unto it, in case the Endowment thereof should be enlarged ; so that the additional Building may make the whole Edifice regular and compleat. And my further Will and Desire is, that when the said Hospital shall be built, the whole yearly Income of the said Lands and Estate, shall, for ever after, be laid out in providing Victuals, Cloathing, Medicines, Attendance, and all other Necessaries for such Idiots and Lunaticks, as shall be received into the same ; and in repairing and enlarging the Building, from Time to Time, as there may be Occasion. And, if a sufficient Number of Idiots and Lunaticks cannot readily be found, I desire that Incurables may be taken into the said Hospital to supply such Deficiency : But, that no Person shall be admitted into it, that labours under any infectious Disease : And, that all such Idiots, Lunaticks, and Incurables, as shall be received into the said Hospital, shall constantly live and reside therein, as well in the Night as in the Day ; and that the Salaries of Agents, Receivers, Officers, Servants, and Attendants, to be employed in the Business of the said Hospital, shall not in the Whole exceed one Fifth Part of the clear yearly Income, or Revenue thereof. And, I further desire that my Executors, the Survivors or Survivor of them, or the Heirs of such, shall not have Power to demise any Part of the said Lands

so to be purchased as aforesaid, but with Consent of the Lord Primate, the Lord High Chancellor, the Lord Archp. of *Dublin*, the Dean of *Christ-Church*, the Dean of *St. Patrick's*, the Physician to the State, and the Surgeon-General, all for the Time being, or the greater Part of them, under their Hands in Writing; and that no Leases of any Part of the said Lands, shall ever be made other than Leases for Years not exceeding Thirty-one, in Possession, and not in Reversion or Remainder, and not punishable of Waste, whereon shall be reserved the best and most improved Rents, that can reasonably and moderately, without racking the Tenants, be gotten for the same, without Fine. Provided always, and it is my Will and earnest Desire, that no Lease of any Part of the said Lands, so to be purchased as aforesaid, shall ever be made to, or in Trust for any Person any way concerned in the Execution of this Trust, or to, or in Trust for any Person any way related or allied, either by Consanguinity or Affinity, to any of the Persons who shall at that Time be concerned in the Execution of this Trust: And, that if any Leases shall happen to be made contrary to my Intention above expressed, the same shall be utterly void and of no Effect. And, I further desire until the Charter herein after mentioned be obtained, my Executors, or the Survivors or Survivor of them, his Heirs, Executors, or Administrators, shall not act in the Execution of this Trust, but with the Consent and Approbation of the said seven additional Trustees, or the greater Part of them, under their Hands in Writing, and shall, with such Consent and Approbation as aforesaid, have Power from Time to Time, to make Rules, Orders, and Regulations, for the Government and Direction of the said Hospital. And, I make it my

Request to my said Executors, that they may in convenient Time, apply to his Majesty for a Charter * to incorporate them, or such of them as shall be then living, and the said additional Trustees, for the better Management and Conduct of this Charity, with a Power to purchase Lands; and to supply by Election, such Vacancies happening in the Corporation, as shall not be supplied by Succession, and such other Powers as may be thought expedient for the due Execution of this Trust, according to my Intention herein before expressed. And, when such Charter shall be obtained, I desire that my Executors, or the Survivors or Survivor of them, or the Heirs of such Survivor, may convey to the Use of such Corporation, in Fee simple, for the Purposes aforesaid, all such Lands and Tenements, as shall be purchased in Manner above mentioned. Provided always, and it is my Will and Intention, that my Executors, until the said Charter, and afterwards the Corporation, to be hereby incorporated, shall out of the yearly Profits of the said Lands when purchased, and out of the yearly Income of my said Fortune devised to my Executors as aforesaid, until such Purchase be made, have Power to reimburse themselves for all such Sums of their own Money, as they shall necessarily expend in the Execution of this Trust. And, that until the said Charter be obtained, all Acts which shall at any Time be done in Execution of this Trust by the greater Part of my Executors then living, with the Consent of the greater Part of the said additional Trustees under their Hands in Writing, shall

* *The Charter was very soon obtained, without Fees, by the Earl of Chesterfield, then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.*

shall be as valid and effectual, as if all my Executors had concurred in the same.

Item : Whereas I purchased the Inheritance of the Tythes of the Parish of *Effernock*, near *Trim*, in the County of *Meath*, for Two Hundred and Sixty Pounds *Sterling* ; I bequeath the said Tythes to the Vicars of *Laracor*, for the Time being, that is to say, so long as the present Episcopal Religion shall continue to be the National Established Faith and Profession in this Kingdom : But, whenever any other Form of Christian Religion shall become the established Faith in this Kingdom, I leave the said Tythes of *Effernock* to be bestowed, as the Profits come in, to the Poor of the said Parish of *Laracor*, by a weekly Proportion, and by such Officers as may then have the Power of distributing Charities to the Poor of the said Parish, while Christianity under any Shape, shall be tolerated among us, still excepting professed *Jews*, *Atheists*, and *Infidels*.

Item : Whereas I have some Leases of certain Houses in *St. Kevin's-street*, near the Deanry-House, built upon the Dean's Ground, and one other House now inhabited by *Henry Land*, in *Deanry-Lane*, alias *Mitre-Alley*, some of which Leases are let for Forty-one Years, or Forty at least, and not yet half expired, I bequeath to Mrs. *Martha White-way*, my Lease or Leases of the said Houses ; I also bequeath to the said *Martha*, my Lease of Forty Years, of *Goodman's Holding*, for which I receive Ten Pounds *per Annum* ; which are two Houses, or more lately built ; I bequeath also to the said *Martha*, the Sum of Three Hundred Pounds *Sterling*, to be paid her by my Executors out of my ready Money, or Bank Bills, immediately after my Death, as soon as the Executors meet. I leave, moreover, to the said *Martha*, my
repeating

repeating Gold Watch, my yellow Tortoise-Shell Snuff-Box, and her Choice of four Gold Rings, out of seven which I now possess.

Item: I bequeath to Mrs. *Mary Swift*, alias *Harrison*, Daughter of the said *Martha*, my plain Gold Watch made by *Quare*, to whom also I give my *Japan* Writing Desk, bestowed to me by my Lady *Worsey*, my square Tortoise-Shell Snuff-Box, richly lined and inlaid with Gold, given to me by the Right Honourable *Henrietta* now Countess of *Oxford*, and the Seal with a *Pegasus*, given to me by the Countess of *Granville*.

Item: I bequeath to Mr. *Ffolliot Whiteway*, eldest Son of the aforesaid *Martha*, who is bred to be an Attorney, the Sum of Sixty Pounds, as also Five Pounds to be laid out in the Purchase of such Law Books as the Honourable Mr. Justice *Lyndsay*, Mr. *Stannard*, or Mr. *M^r Aulay* shall judge proper for him.

Item: I bequeath to Mr. *John Whiteway*, youngest Son of the said *Martha*, who is to be brought up a Surgeon, the Sum of One Hundred Pounds, in order to qualify him for a Surgeon, but under the Direction of his Mother; which said Sum of One Hundred Pounds is to be paid to Mrs. *Whiteway*, in Behalf of her said Son *John*, out of the Arrears which shall be due to me from my Church Livings (except those of the Deanry Tythes, which are now let to the Rev. Doctor *Wilson*) as soon as the said Arrears can be paid to my Executors. I also leave the said *John* Five Pounds to be laid out in buying such Physical or Chirurgical Books, as Doctor *Grattan* and Mr. *Nichols* shall think fit for him.

Item: I bequeath to Mrs. *Anne Ridgeway*, now in my Family, the Profits of the Lease of two Houses let to *John Cowmly*, for forty Years, of which only eight or nine are expired, for which

the said *Corwnly* payeth me Nine Pounds *Sterling* for Rent, yearly. I also bequeath to the said *Anne*, the Sum of One Hundred Pounds *Sterling*, to be paid her by my Executors in six Weeks after my Decease, out of whatever Money or Bank Bills I may possess when I die : As also three Gold Rings, the Remainder of the seven above-mentioned, after Mrs. *Whiteway* hath made her Choice of four ; and all my small Pieces of Plate, not exceeding in Weight one Ounce and one third Part of an Ounce.

Item : I bequeath to my dearest Friend *Alexander Pope* of *Twickenham*, Esq; my Picture in Miniature, drawn by *Zinck*, of *Robert* late Earl of *Oxford*.

Item : I leave to *Edward* now Earl of *Oxford*, my Seal of *Julius Cæsar*, as also another Seal, supposed to be a young *Hercules*, both very choice Antiques, and set in Gold ; both which I chuse to bestow to the said Earl, because they belonged to her late Most Excellent Majesty *Queen Anne*, of ever Glorious, Immortal, and truly Pious Memory, the real Nursing Mother of her Kingdoms.

Item : I leave to the Reverend Mr. *James Stopford*, Vicar of * *Finglass*, my Picture of King *Charles* the First, drawn by *Vandike*, which was given to me by the said *James* ; as also, my large Picture of Birds, which was given to me by *Thomas* Earl of *Pembroke*.

Item : I bequeath to the Reverend Mr. *Robert Grattan*, Prebendary of *St. Audoen's*, my Gold Bottle Screw, which he gave me, and my strong Box, on Condition of his giving the sole Use of the said Box to his Brother Dr. *James Grattan*, during the Life of the said Doctor, who hath
more

* *This very learned and ingenious Gentleman, succeeded Dr. GEORGE BERKELEY in the Bishoprick of Cloyne, and died August, 1759.*

more Occasion for it, and the second best Beaver Hat I shall die possessed of.

Item: I bequeath to Mr. *John Crattan*, Prebendary of *Clonmethan*, my Silver Box in which the Freedom of the City of *Corke* * was presented to me; in which I desire the said *John* to keep the Tobacco he usually cheweth, called Pigtail.

Item: I bequeath all my Horses and Mares to the Reverend Mr. *John Jackson*, Vicar of *Santry*, together with all my Horse Furniture: Lamenting that I had not Credit enough with any Chief Governor (since the Change of Times) to get some additional Church Preferment for so virtuous and worthy a Gentleman. I also leave him my third best Beaver Hat.

Item: I bequeath to the Reverend Doctor *Francis Wilson*, the Works of *Plato* in three Folio Volumes, the Earl of *Clarendon*'s History in three Folio Volumes, and my best Bible; together with thirteen small *Persian* Pictures in the Drawing Room, and the small Silver Tankard given to me by the Contribution of some Friends, whose Names are engraved at the Bottom of the said Tankard.

Item: I bequeath to the Earl of *Orrery* the enamelled Silver Plates to distinguish Bottles of Wine by, given to me by his excellent † Lady, and the Half-length Picture of the late Countess of *Orkney* in the Drawing-Room.

Item:

* See his Letter to the Mayor of *Corke* on this Occasion. See Vol. VIII.

† MARGARET HAMILTON, his Lordship's second Wife, Daughter of JOHN HAMILTON, of *Tynan*, Esq; a great Heiress in her own Right and Niece to Dr. ANTHONY DOPPING, Bishop of *Ossory*. Her Ladyship dyed at *Knightbridge* near London, Oct. 1759.

Item: I bequeath to * *Alexander M' Aulay*, Esq; the Gold Box in which the Freedom of the City of *Dublin* was presented to me, as a Testimony of the Esteem and Love I have for him, on Account of his great Learning, fine natural Parts, unaffected Piety and Benevolence, and his truly honourable Zeal in Defence of the legal Rights of the Clergy, in Opposition to all their unprovoked Oppressors.

Item: I bequeath to *Deane Swift*, Esq; my large Silver Standish, consisting of a large Silver Plate, an Ink Pot, a Sand Box and Bell of the same Metal.

Item: I bequeath to Mrs. † *Mary Barber*, the Medal of Queen *Anne* and Prince *George*, which she formerly gave me.

Item: I leave to the Reverend Mr. *John Worrall*, my best Beaver Hat.

Item: I bequeath to the Reverend Doctor *Patrick Delany* my Medal of Queen *Anne* in Silver, and on the Reverse the Bishops of *England* kneeling before her Most Sacred Majesty.

Item: I bequeath to the Reverend Mr. *James King*, Prebendary of *Tipper*, my large gilded Medal of King *Charles* the First, and on the Reverse a Crown of Martyrdom with other Devices. My Will, nevertheless, is, that if any of the above-named Legatees should die before me, that then, and in that Case, the respective Legacies to them bequeathed, shall revert to myself, and become again subject to my Disposal.

Item: Whereas I have the Lease of a Field in Trust for me, commonly called the *Vineyard*, let to

* He wrote a Pamphlet in Favour of Tythes, entitled PROPERTY INVIOLEABLE.

† This Lady published a Volume of Poems, which are very much esteemed.

to the Reverend Doctor *Francis Corbet*, and the Trust declared by the said Doctor; the said Field, with some Land on this Side of the Road, making in all about three Acres, for which I pay yearly to the Dean and Chapter of St. *Patrick's* * * *

WHEREAS I have built a strong Wall round the said Piece of Ground, eight or nine Feet high, faced on the South Aspect with Brick, which cost me above Six Hundred Pounds *Sterling*: And, likewise, another Piece of Ground as aforesaid, of half an Acre, adjoining to the Burial Place called the *Cabbage-Garden*, now tenanted by *William White*, Gardener: My Will is, that the Ground inclosed by the great Wall, may be sold for the Remainder of the Lease, at the highest Price my Executors can get for it, in Belief and Hopes, that the said Price will exceed Three Hundred Pounds at the lowest Value: For which my Successor in the Deanry shall have the first Refusal; and, it is my earnest Desire, that the succeeding Deans and Chapters may preserve the said *Vineyard* and Piece of Land adjoining, where the said *White* now liveth, so as to be always in the Hands of the succeeding Deans during their Office, by each Déan lessening One Fourth of the Purchase Money to each succeeding Dean, and for no more than the present Rent.

AND I appoint the Honourable *Robert Lyndsay*, one of the Judges of the Court of Common-Pleas; * *Henry Singleton*, Esq; Prime-Serjeant to his Majesty; the Reverend Doctor *Patrick Delany*, Chancellor of St. *Patrick's*; the Reverend Doctor *Francis Wilson*, Prebendary of *Kilmacktolway*; *Eaton Stannard*,

* Soon after Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, which he resigned in Favour of WILLIAM YORK, Esq; and in 1754 was made Master of the Rolls.

Stannard, Esq; Recorder of the City of *Dublin**; the Reverend Mr. *Robert Grattan*, Prebendary of *St. Audsen's*; the Reverend Mr. *John Grattan*, Prebendary of *Clonmethan*; the Reverend Mr. *James Stopford*, Vicar of *Finglass*; the Reverend Mr. *James King*, Prebendary of *Tipper*; and, *Alexander Mc Aulay*, Esq; my Executors.

IN Witness whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, and published and declared this as my last Will and Testament, this Third Day of May, 1740 forty.

JONATHAN SWIFT.

Signed, sealed and published by the above-named Jonathan Swift, in Presence of Us, who have subscribed our Names in his Presence,

Jo. Wynne.
Jo. Rochfort.
William Dunkin.

* *Made Prime Serjeant at Law, 1754.*

SOME

S O M E

PARTICULARS

Concerning

DR. S W I F T.

Taken from Mrs. PILKINGTON's Memoirs.

MRS. Pilkington's Acquaintance with Dr. Swift commenced from sending him some Verses on his Birth-day. These the Dean received very kindly, and said, he would see her whenever she pleased.

A FEW Days after, she was introduced to the Dean in Dr. Delany's Garden at Delville, by a Gentlewoman *. He saluted her, and asked the Lady, if she was her Daughter? The Lady smiled, and said, she was Mrs. Pilkington. "What," says he, "this

Mrs. BARBER, an ingenious Lady, who published a Volume of Poems.

“ this poor little Child married! married! God
 “ help her, she is very early engaged in Trouble.”
 The Dean engaging Mr. *Pilkington* to preach for
 him at the Cathedral next *Sunday* in St. *Patrick's*
 Church, Mrs. *Pilkington* was charmed to see with
 what a becoming Piety the Dean performed that
 Holy Service, which he had so much at Heart, that
 he wanted not the Assistance of the Liturgy, but
 went quite through it, without ever looking in the
 Book. He bowed at the Table; which Behaviour
 was censured, as favouring of Popery. But this
 Circumstance may vindicate him from the wicked
 Asperision of being deemed an Unbeliever, since it
 is plain he had the utmost Reverence for the Eu-
 charist. Service being ended, the Dean was surround-
 ed at the Church-door, by a Crowd of Poor; to all of
 whom he gave Charity, except an old Woman,
 who held out a very dirty Hand to him. He told
 her very gravely, That though she was a Beggar,
 Water was not so scarce but she might have washed
 her Hands. When they came to the Deanry, the
 Dean very kindly saluted Mrs. *Pilkington*, and with-
 out allowing her Time to sit down, bad her come
 and see his Library; but merrily told Mr. *Pilking-
 ton*, who was for following them, that he did not
 desire his Company. “ Well,” said he to her, “ I
 “ have brought you here to shew you all the Mo-
 “ ney I got when I was in the Ministry; but dont
 “ steal any of it.” “ I will ont indeed, Sir,” said
 she. So opening a Cabinet, he shewed her a Par-
 cel of empty Drawers: “ Bless me,” says he,
 “ the Money is flown.” He then opened his Bu-
 reau, wherein he had a great Number of curious
 Trinkets of various Kinds, some of which were
 presented to him by the Earl and Countess of *Ox-
 ford*, Lady *Masham*, and Lady *Betty Germain*. At
 last coming to a Drawer filled with Medals, he bad
 her

her chuse two for herself; but he could not help smiling, when she began to poize them in her Hands, chusing them by Weight rather than Antiquity.

AT Dinner the Dean's Behaviour was very humorous. He placed himself at the Head of his Table, opposite to a great Pier Glass, so that he could see in the Glass whatever the Servants did behind him. He was served entirely in Plate, with great Elegance, but the Beef being over-roasted, put the Company all in Confusion. The Dean called for the Cook-maid, and ordered her to take the Beef down Stairs, and do it less. She answered very innocently, that she could not. "Why," "what Sort of a Creature are you," says he, "to commit a Fault which cannot be amended?" And turning to Mrs. Pilkington, he said very gravely, "That he hoped, as the Cook was a Woman of Genius, he should, by this Manner of arguing, be able, in about a Year's Time, to convince her she had better send up the Meat too little than too much done;" charging the Men-Servants, whenever they imagined the Meat was ready, they should take it Spit and all, and bring it up by Force, promising to aid them in case the Cook resisted. Then turning his Eye on the Looking-Glass, he espied the Butler opening a Bottle of Ale; and helping himself to the first Glass, he very kindly jumbled the rest together, that his Master and Guests might all fare alike. "Ha! Friend, said the Dean, "Sharp's the Word, "I find; you drank my Ale, for which I stop two Shillings of your Board Wages this Week; for I scorn to be outdone in any Thing, even in Cheating."

DINNER being ended, the Dean thanked Mr. Pilkington for his Sermon: "I never," said he,
VOL. XI. D d "preached

“ preached but twice in my Life; and then they
 “ were not Sermons but Pamphlets.” Mrs. *Pilkington*, asked him, what might be the Subject of them? He told her they were against *Wood’s* Halfpence. Having asked Mr. and Mrs. *Pilkington* if they could smoke? and being answered, that they did not; “ It is a Sign,” said he, “ you
 “ were neither of you bred in the University
 “ of *Oxford*; for Drinking and Smoking are the
 “ first Rudiments of Learning taught there; and
 “ in those two Arts no University in *Europe* can
 “ outdo them.” Having asked Mrs. *Pilkington* if she had any Faults? “ Pray, Mr. Dean,” said Dr. *Delany*, “ why will you be so unpolite as to
 “ suppose Mrs. *Pilkington* hath any Faults? “ I’ll
 “ tell you,” replied the Dean; “ whenever I see
 “ a Number of agreeable Qualities in any Person,
 “ I am always sure they have bad ones sufficient to
 “ poize the Scale.” Mrs. *Pilkington* bowed, and told him, he did her great Honour; in that copying Bishop *Berkeley*, whom she had frequently heard declare, that when any Speech was made to him, which might be construed either into a Compliment or an Affront, or that had two Handles, he always took hold of the best.

The Dean then asked Mrs. *Pilkington*, if she were a Queen, what she would chuse to have after Dinner? She answered, “ Your Conversation, Sir.” “ Pooh,” said he, “ I mean, what Regale.” “ A Dish of Coffee, Sir,” answered she. “ Why then,” said he, I will so far make you as happy
 “ as a Queen; you shall have some in Perfection:
 “ For, when I was Chaplain to the Earl of *Berkeley*,
 “ who was in the Government here, I was so poor,
 “ I was obliged to keep a Coffee-house, and
 “ all the Nobility resorted to it to talk Treason.” The Dean then set about making the

the Coffee: But the Fire scorching his Hand, he called to Mrs. *Pilkington* to reach him his Glove; and changing the Coffee pot to his Left-hand, held out his Right one, ordering her to put the Glove on it; which accordingly she did; when taking up Part of his Gown to fan himself with, and acting in Character of a prudish Lady, he said, "Well, "I don't know what to think; Women may be "honest that do such Things; but, for my Part, "I never could bear to touch any Man's Flesh— "except my Husband's; whom, perhaps," (said he,) she wished at the Devil.

"Mr. *Pilkington*," said he, "you would not tell "me your Wife's Faults; but I have found her out "to be a d—n'd insolent, proud unmannerly "Slut." "What hath she done now?" said Mr. *Pilkington*, "Done," said the Dean; "why no—"thing but sat there quietly, and never once of—"fered to interrupt me in making the Coffee; "whereas a Lady of modern good Breeding would "have struggled with me for the Coffee-pot, until "she had made me scald myself and her, and made "me throw the Coffee in the Fire, or perhaps at "her Head, rather than permit me to take so "much Trouble for her."

Mrs. *Pilkington* staid at Home with the Dean during the Time of the Afternoon's Service; and he made her read his History of the last Session of Parliament and the Peace of *Utrecht*, written at *Windfor* in 1713*, asking her at the Conclusion of every Period, whether she understood it? "for, I "would," said he, "have it intelligible to the "meanest Capacity; and, if you comprehend it, "it is possible every Body may."

She accompanied the Dean to Evening-prayer; and on their Return to the Deanry, he told Mr.

D d 2

and

* See Vol. IX. p. 1.

and Mrs. *Pilkington*, that he gave them Leave to stay to Supper; which from him was a sufficient Invitation. The Dean then decanted a Bottle of Wine; and the last Glass being muddy, he called to Mr. *Pilkington* to drink it; "for," said he, "I always keep some poor Parson to drink the foul Wine for me." Mr. *Pilkington* entering into his Humour, thanked him, and told him, he did not know the Difference, but was glad to get a Glass at any Rate. "Why then," said the Dean, "you shan't; for I'll drink it myself. Why P—x take you, you are wiser than a paltry Curate whom I asked to dine with me a few Days ago; for, upon my making the same Speech to him, he told me he did not understand such Usage; and so walked off without his Dinner. By the same Token, I told the Gentleman who recommended him to me, that the Fellow was a Block-head, and I had done with him."

The Dean then missing his golden Bottle-Screw, told Mrs. *Pilkington* very sternly, he was sure she had stolen it. She affirmed very seriously, she had not. Upon which he looked for it, and found it where he himself had laid it: "It is well for you," said he, "that I have got it, or I would have charged you with Theft." "Why, pray, Sir," said she, "should I be suspected more than any other Person in the Company?" "For a very good Reason," said he, "because you are the poorest."

At their going away, the Dean handed Mrs. *Pilkington* down all the Steps to the Coach, thanking them for the Honour of their Company, at the same Time slipping into her Hand as much Money as Mr. *Pilkington* and she had given at the Offering in the Morning, and Coach-hire also; which she durst not refuse, lest she should have been deemed

as great a Blockhead as the Parson who refused the thick Wine.

In one of the Dean's periodical Fits of Deafness, he sent for Mrs. *Pilkington*; who having come, he brought out a large Book, finely bound in Turkey Leather, and handsomely gilt: "This," said he, "is the Translation of the Epistles of *Horace*, a Present to me from the Author; it is a special good Cover; but I have a Mind there should be something valuable within Side of it." So, taking out his Pen-knife, he cut out all the Leaves close to the inner Margin. "Now, said he, "I will give these what they greatly want;" and put them all into the Fire. "Your Task, Madam, is to paste in these Letters, in this Cover, in the Order I shall give them to you: I intended to do it myself, but that I thought it might be a pretty Amusement for a Child; so I sent for you." She told him, she was extremely proud to be honoured with his Commands; but requested to have Leave to read the Letters as she went on. "Why," said the Dean, "provided you will acknowledge yourself amply rewarded for your Trouble, I do not much care if I indulge you so far."

In reading the Letters, she could not avoid remarking to the Dean, that notwithstanding the Friendship Mr. *Pope* professed for Mr. *Gay*, he could not forbear a great many satirical, or, if she might be allowed to say so, envious Remarks on the Success of the Beggar's Opera. The Dean very frankly owned, he did not think Mr. *Pope* was so candid to the Merit of other Writers as he ought to be. She then ventured to ask the Dean, whether he thought the Lines Mr. *Pope* addressed him with in the Beginning of the *Dunciad*, were any Compliment to him? *viz.*

O thou! whatever Title please thine Ear.

"I believe," said he, "they were meant as such, but they are very stiff." "Indeed, Sir, said she, he is so perfectly a Master of harmonious Numbers, that had his Heart been the least affected with his Subject, he must have writ better. How cold, how forced, are his Lines to you, compared with yours to him!

Hail, happy Pope! whose gen'rous Mind, &c.

Vol. VI. p. 325.

"Here we see the masterly Poet, and the warm, sincere, generous Friend; while he, according to the Character he gives of Mr. Addison, damns *with faint Praise*."—Well," replied the Dean, "I'll shew you a late Letter of his." He did so; and Mrs. Pilkington was surprised to find it filled with low and un-Gentleman-like Reflections, both on Mr. Gay, and the two Noble Persons* who honoured him with their Patronage after his Disappointment at Court. "Well, Madam," said the Dean, "what do you think of that Letter?" (seeing she had gone quite through it.) "Indeed
"Sir,"

* Mr. GAY after he had the Offer of being made Gentleman Usher to the Duke of Cumberland, which he refused, wrote the second Part of the Beggar's Opera, entitled, POLLY, which was prohibited from being acted at any of the Theatres, by CHARLES, Duke of Grafton, then Lord Chamberlain of the Household; upon which their Graces the Duke and Dutches of Queensberry made Mr. GAY their Steward. See the Poem, Vol. II. p. 331.

"Sir," replied she, "I am sorry I have read it; for it gives me Reason to think there is no such Thing as a sincere Friend to be met with in the World."—"Why," replied he, "Authors are as jealous of their Prerogative as Kings; and can no more bear a Rival in the Empire of Wit, than a Monarch could in his Dominions."

Mrs. Pilkington then observing a *Latin* Sentence writ in *Italics*, desired the Dean to explain it. "No replied he, smiling, "I'll leave that for your Husband to do. I'll send for him to dine with us, and in the mean Time we'll go and take a Walk in *Naboth's Vineyard*."—"Where may that be, Sir?" said she. "Why, a Garden," said the Dean, "I cheated one of my Neighbours out of." When they entered the Garden, or rather the Field, which was square, and enclosed with a Stone Wall, the Dean asked her, how she liked it? "Why, pray, Sir," said she, "where is the Garden?" "Look behind you," said he. She did so; and observed the South Wall was lined with Brick, and a great Number of Fruit Trees planted against it, which being then in Blossom, looked very beautiful. "What are you so intent on?" said the Dean. "The opening Bloom," replied she; which brought *Waller's* Lines to her Remembrance,

Hope waits upon the flow'ry Prime.

"Oh! replied he, "you are in a poetical Vein; I thought you had been taking Notice of my Wall. It is the best in *Ireland*. When the Masons were building it, (as most Tradesmen are Rogues,) I watched them very close, and as often as they could, they put in a rotten Stone; of which however I took no Notice, until they had built
"three

“ three or four Perches beyond it. Now, as I am
 “ an absolute Monarch in the Liberties, and King
 “ of the Rabble, my Way with them was, to have
 “ the Wall thrown down to the Place where I ob-
 “ served the rotten Stone; and, by doing so five
 “ or six Times, the Workmen were at last con-
 “ vinced it was their Interest to be honest:”—“ or
 “ else, Sir,” said Mrs. *Pilkington*, “ your Wall
 “ would have been as tedious a Piece of Work as
 “ *Penelope’s* Web, if all that was done in the Day
 “ was to be undone at Night.” “ Well,” answered
 the Dean, “ I find you have Poetry for every Oc-
 “ casion; but as you cannot keep Pace with me in
 “ walking, I would have you sit down on that
 “ little Bank, ’till you are rested, or I tired, to
 “ put us more upon a Par.”

She seated herself, and away the Dean walked,
 or rather trotted as hard as ever he could
 drive. She could not help smiling at his odd
 Gait; for she thought to herself, he had writ-
 ten so much in Praise of Horses, that he was re-
 solved to imitate them as nearly as he could. As
 she was indulging this Fancy, the Dean returned
 to her, and gave her a strong Confirmation
 of his Partiality to those Animals. “ I have been
 “ considering, Madam, as I walked,” said he,
 “ what a Fool Mr. *Pilkington* was to marry you;
 “ for he could have afforded to keep a Horse for
 “ less Money than you cost him; and that you
 “ must confess, would have given him better Ex-
 “ ercise and more Pleasure than a Wife—Why,
 “ you laugh, and don’t answer me—is it not
 “ Truth?”——“ I must answer you, Sir,” re-
 plied she, “ with another Question: Pray how can
 “ a Batchelor judge of this Matter?” “ I find,”
 said he, “ you are vain enough to give yourself
 “ the Preference.” “ I do, Sir,” replied she,
 “ to

“to that Species here; to a Houyhnhnm I would, as becomes me, give Preference. But, Sir, it is going to Rain.”——“I hope not, said he, for that will cost me Sixpence for a Coach for you,” (the Garden being at some Distance from the House.) “Come, haste; O how the Tester trembles in my Pocket!” She obeyed; and they got Home just Time enough to escape a heavy Shower. Thank God, said the Dean, I have saved my Money. Here, you Fellow, (to the Servant) carry this Sixpence to the lame old Man that sells Gingerbread at the Corner, because he tries to do something, and does not beg.”

Mrs. *Pilkington* was shewed into a little Street-Parlour, in which was Mrs. *Brent*, his House-keeper. “Here,” says he, Mrs. *Brent*, take Care of this Child, while I take my walk out within Doors.” The Dean then ran up the great Stairs, down one Pair of Back-stairs, up another, in so violent a Manner, that Mrs. *Pilkington* could not help expressing her Uneasiness to Mrs. *Brent*, lest he should fall, and be hurted. Mrs. *Brent* said, it was a customary Exercise with him, when the Weather did not permit him to walk Abroad.

Mrs. *Brent* then told Mrs. *Pilkington* of the Dean's Charity; of his giving about half of his yearly Income in private Pensions to decayed Families; and keeping 500*l.* in the constant Service of industrious Poor, which he lent out 5*l.* at a Time, and took the Payment back at 2*s.* a-Week; which, she observed, did them more Service than if he gave it to them entirely, as it obliged them to Work, and at the same Time kept up this charitable Fund for the Assistance of many. “You cannot imagine,” said she, what Numbers of poor Tradesmen, who have even wanted proper Tools to carry on their Work, have, by this small Loan, been

“ been put into a prosperous Way, and brought
 “ up their Families in Credit. The Dean, added
 “ she, hath found out a new Method of being cha-
 “ ritable, in which, however, I believe, he will
 “ have but few Followers, which is, to debar himself
 “ of what he calls Superfluities of Life, in order
 “ to administer to the Necessities of the Distressed.
 “ You just now saw an Instance of it; the Money
 “ a Coach would have cost him, he gave to a poor
 “ Man unable to walk. When he dines alone, he
 “ drinks a Pint of Beer, and gives away the Price
 “ of a Pint of Wine. And thus he acts in num-
 “ berless Instances.”

The Dean came to dine with Mr. and Mrs. *Pilkington* at their *Lilliputian* Palace, as he called it; and who could have thought it? He just looked into the Parlour, and ran up into the Garret, then into Mrs. *Pilkington*'s Bed-chamber and Library, and from thence down to the Kitchen; and the House being very clean, he complimented her upon it, and told her, that was his Custom; and that it was from the Cleanliness of the Garret and Kitchen, he judged of the good Housewifery of the Mistress of the House; for no doubt but a Slut may have the Room clean where the Guests are to be entertained.

He was sometimes very free, even to his Superiors; of which the following Story, related to Mrs. *Pilkington* by himself, may serve as one Instance amongst a thousand others.

The last Time he was in London, he went to dine with the Earl of *Burlington*, who was then but newly married. The Earl being willing, 'tis supposed to have some Diversion, did not introduce him to his Lady, nor mention his Name. After Dinner, said the Dean, “ Lady *Burlington*, I hear you can sing; sing me a Song.” The Lady looked on this unceremonious Manner of asking a Favour
 with

with Distaste, and positively refused him. He said, she should sing, or he would make her. "Why," "Madam, I suppose you take me for one of your "poor English Hedge Parsons; sing when I bid "you." As the Earl did nothing but laugh at this Freedom, the Lady was so vexed, that she burst into Tears, and retired.

His first Compliment to her when he saw her again, was, "Pray, Madam, are you as proud "and as ill-natured now, as when I saw you last?" To which she answered with great good Humour, "No, Mr. Dean; I'll sing for you, if you please." From which Time he conceived great Esteem for her. But who that knew him would take Offence at his Bluntness?

Mrs. *Pilkington* could not recollect that ever she saw the Dean laugh; perhaps he thought it beneath him; for, when any Pleasantry passed which might have excited it, he used to suck his Cheeks to avoid Risibility. He used frequently to put her in Mind of *Shakespear's* Description of *Cassius*.

He is a great Discerner, and he looks
Quite through the Deeds of Men——

Seldom he smiles, and smiles in such a Sort

As if he mock'd himself, and scorn'd his Spirit,
That could be mov'd to smile at any Thing.

Jul. Cæsar.

Mrs. *Pilkington* believed the Dean's early Youth did not promise that bright Day of Wit which hath since enlightened the learned World. Whilst he was at the University of *Dublin*, he was so far from being distinguished for any Superiority of Parts or Learning, that he was stopped of his Degree as a Dunce. When she heard the Dean relate this Circumstance, she told him, she supposed he had been idle; but he affirmed to the contrary, assuring her he was really dull; which, if true, is very surprising.

"I have,"

“ I have,” says she, “ often been led to look
 “ on the World as a Garden, and the human
 “ Mind as so many Plants, set by the Hand of
 “ the great Creator for Utility and Ornament.
 “ Thus some, we see, early produce beautiful
 “ Blossoms, and as soon fade away; others,
 “ whose Gems are more slow in unfolding,
 “ but more permanent when blown; and others
 “ again, who, though longer in arriving at Per-
 “ fection, not only bless us then with Shade and
 “ Odour, but also with delicious wholesome Fruit.”

He was a perpetual Friend to Merit and Learning; and utterly incapable of Envy; for in true genuine Wit, he could fear no Rival.

It has been often observed, that where great Talents are bestowed, there the strongest Passions are likewise given. This great Man sometimes let them have Dominion over him, and that on trifling Occasions, especially at Meal-Times: However, when the Cloth was taken away, he made his Guests rich Amends for any Pain he had given them. For then

Was truly mingled in the friendly Bowl,
 The Feast of Reason, and the Flow of Soul.

Pope.

Yet he preserved strict Temperance: For he never drank above half a Pint of Wine, in every Glass of which he mixed Water and Sugar: yet, if he liked his Company, would sit many Hours over it, unlocking all the Springs of Policy, Learning, true Humour, and inimitable Wit.

The following Story the Dean told to Mrs. Pilkington.

A Cler-

A Clergyman*, who was a most learned fine Gentleman, but, under the softest and politest Appearance, concealed the most turbulent Ambition, having made his Merit as a Preacher too eminent to be overlooked, had it early rewarded with a Mitre. Dr. *Swift* went to congratulate him on it; but told him, he hoped, as his Lordship was a Native of *Ireland*, and had now a Seat in the House of Peers, he would employ his powerful Elocution in the Service of his distressed Country. The Prelate told him, the Bishoprick was but a very small one, and he could not hope for a better, if he did not oblige the Court. "Very well," says *Swift*, "then it is to be hoped, when you have a better, you will become an honest Man." "Ay, that I will, Mr. Dean," says he. "'Till then, my Lord, farewell," answered *Swift*. This Prelate was twice translated to richer Sees; and, on every Translation, Dr. *Swift* waited on him to remind him of his Promise; but to no Purpose; there was now an Archbishoprick in View, and 'till that was obtained, nothing could be done. Having in a short Time likewise got this, he then sent for the Dean, and told him, "I am now at the Top of my Preferment; for I well know that no *Irishman* will ever be made Primate; therefore as I can rise no higher in Fortune or Station, I will zealously promote the Good of my Country." And from that Time became a most zealous Patriot.

E e

Some

* Dr. Theophilus Bolton, promoted to the Bishoprick of Clonfert, translated from thence to Elphin, and afterwards to the Archbishoprick of Cashell.

“ I have,” says she, “ often been led to look
 “ on the World as a Garden, and the human
 “ Mind as so many Plants, set by the Hand of
 “ the great Creator for Utility and Ornament.
 “ Thus some, we see, early produce beautiful
 “ Blossoms, and as soon fade away; others,
 “ whose Gems are more slow in unfolding,
 “ but more permanent when blown; and others
 “ again, who, though longer in arriving at Per-
 “ fection, not only bless us then with Shade and
 “ Odour, but also with delicious wholesome Fruit.”

He was a perpetual Friend to Merit and Learning; and utterly incapable of Envy; for in true genuine Wit, he could fear no Rival.

It has been often observed, that where great Talents are bestowed, there the strongest Passions are likewise given. This great Man sometimes let them have Dominion over him, and that on trifling Occasions, especially at Meal-Times: However, when the Cloth was taken away, he made his Guests rich Amends for any Pain he had given them. For then

Was truly mingled in the friendly Bowl,
 The Feast of Reason, and the Flow of Soul.

Pope.

Yet he preserved strict Temperance: For he never drank above half a Pint of Wine, in every Glass of which he mixed Water and Sugar: yet, if he liked his Company, would sit many Hours over it, unlocking all the Springs of Policy, Learning, true Humour, and inimitable Wit.

The following Story the Dean told to Mrs. Pilkington.

A Cler-

A Clergyman*, who was a most learned fine Gentleman, but, under the softest and politest Appearance, concealed the most turbulent Ambition, having made his Merit as a Preacher too eminent to be overlooked, had it early rewarded with a Mitre. Dr. *Swift* went to congratulate him on it; but told him, he hoped, as his Lordship was a Native of *Ireland*, and had now a Seat in the House of Peers, he would employ his powerful Elocution in the Service of his distressed Country. The Prelate told him, the Bishoprick was but a very small one, and he could not hope for a better, if he did not oblige the Court. "Very well," says *Swift*, "then it is to be hoped, when you have a better, you will become an honest Man." "Ay, that I will, Mr. Dean," says he. "'Till then, my Lord, farewell," answered *Swift*. This Prelate was twice translated to richer Sees; and, on every Translation, Dr. *Swift* waited on him to remind him of his Promise; but to no Purpose; there was now an Archbishoprick in View, and 'till that was obtained, nothing could be done. Having in a short Time likewise got this, he then sent for the Dean, and told him, "I am now at the Top of my Preferment; for I well know that no *Irishman* will ever be made Primate; therefore as I can rise no higher in Fortune or Station, I will zealously promote the Good of my Country." And from that Time became a most zealous Patriot.

E e

Some

* Dr. Theophilus Bolton, promoted to the Bishoprick of Clonfert, translated from thence to Elphin, and afterwards to the Archbishoprick of Cashell.

⑤

D

E

⑤



Some further Account

O F

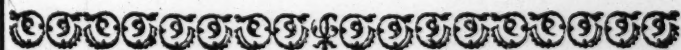
Doct^r S W I F T,

I N A

L E T T E R

T O T H E

E A R L of C———.



93

L

F

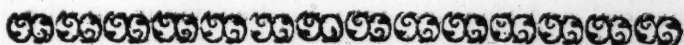
qu
I a
tha
an
aln
aft
Co
th

I

th
he
gr
he
wh
m

Bo

we
Sh
ge
hi
fo
en



Letter to the Earl of C——.

MY LORD,

HAVING been often solicited by you and many other Persons of Learning and Consequence, to write some Anecdotes of Dr. *Swift*, I always told you my Incapacity for such a Task, that I had not Leisure, from my own Business, and that, as there were many Authors who had already published his Life, I could say very little after them; however, in Compliance with your Commands, I send you some few Particulars of that great and good Man.

IN his very early Days, he was fond of knowing Variety of Life, in all Shapes whatever, from the Beggar to the Prince. When he was a Child, he left his Mother to go strolling with some vagrant Gypsies, who treated him very ill, because he would not steal Poultry and Linen for them, on which he left them at the End of three Days, and made what Haste he could Home.

At other Times he was a Waggoner's Boy, a Boot Catcher, an Ostler, a Waiter at a Tavern; would sometimes dress himself like a Weaver, a Shoemaker, and other Journeymen in *London*, to get into the Knowledge of their Professions. But, his greatest Desire was to be Footman to a Lady, for which Purpose he would hire Livery Cloaths, enquire for Service at their Houses or Lodgings;

but, on Examination for his Character and Discharges, and Enquiry into his Behaviour, at the Places he said he had lived, he was always disappointed, which gave him great Concern.

HE took a Frolick when he was a young Man, to borrow a Beggar's Cloaths, in which Disguise he went to a neighbouring Farmer's in *Gloucestershire*, when all the Family were at Work in the Fields at Harvest Time, excepting the Wife, to whom he applied for Alms, pretending to be very lame and helpless; but, instead of meeting with Relief, she abused him, calling him Thief, Rogue, and Robber, and made a hideous Noise, which alarmed the Husband and the Servants so much, that they all ran to the House; but, before they got thither, *Swift* took to his Heels and escaped; after which he never again attempted to beg; and often said, that young Beggars got very little by their strolling Trade in *England*.

WHEN Lord *Berkely*, one of the Lords Justices of *Ireland*, was in that Kingdom, to whom Dr. *Swift* was Chaplain, Lady *Betty Berkely* his Daughter, was very fond of reading the great Mr. *Boyle's* Meditations, and frequently desired Mr. *Swift* to read to her; but, being one Time interrupted by Company, he stopped, and my Lady desired him to fold down the Leaf where he left off: Next Day her Ladyship requested him to read to her again, when he began with the Meditation on a Broomstick, which pleased her so extremely well, that she ran in the highest Raptures on Mr. *Boyle*, who could write so religiously on a Broomstick. But, Lady *Betty* opening the Book sometime after, found the Meditation on the Broomstick, in Mr. *Swift's* Hand Writing, and stuck in at the Place where he had been reading. This had the desired Effect,

as Mr. *Swift* never was called upon again to read to her Ladyship.

WHEN the Dean was in *London*, he agreed with Mr. *Pope* and Mr. *Gay*, to take a Journey into the Country, for about a Fortnight, and ordered his Servants (who were on board Wages) to prepare themselves; but one of them, who was a Stranger in *England*, did not come to his Master's Lodgings until he had set out, which threw the poor Man into the greatest Agonies, being entirely destitute of Money and Friends; upon which, he hired himself to a Farmer at *Islington*, to make Hay, and when he expected the Dean in Town, he enquired for him at his Lodgings; when his Master asked him, how he dared to be absent, and not to attend him into the Country? The poor Fellow answered, he had overslept himself, and was distracted when he heard he was gone to the Country, as he had no Money or Friends in *London*; owed for the Rent of his Lodgings, which he could not pay, and was afraid of being taken up for an *Irish* Robber; which Story so pleased and moved the Dean, that he again took him into his Favour, gave him double Board Wages for the Time he was absent, and made him a Present of three Guineas for his great Industry.

SOME Time after Dr. *Swift* came to the Deanry of St. *Patrick's*, taking his Rounds through the Liberty of his Precincts, he saw a Nayler and his Wife at Work, very early in the Morning, and stopping to talk with them, asked, how much they earned in a Week, what Children they had, and, how much Money to carry on Trade? They answered, they had five Children, no Stock, nor any Money to carry on Business, nor could they ever have a Penny at the Week's End, being obliged to pay very dear for what Iron they had from the Monger,

Monger, who employed them to make Nails, which he had very cheap from them, and made them pay the highest Price for the Rod-Iron, as he gave them Credit, and took it out in Work; and, what with the Expence of Rent, Coals, and Maintenance of their Children, they could never have one Halfpenny beforehand. The Dean then asked the Man, how much Money would be sufficient to buy him Rod-Iron and Coals, and to sell his Nails to another Iron Monger, and to dispose of some in his own Shop? The Nailer answered, thirty Shillings, which would make him very happy. The Dean replied, suppose I should lend you that Money, how do you propose to pay it? the Nailer answered, by a Shilling a Week. Then said the Dean, I will advance you three Guineas, to be paid me by a Shilling every Week; I insist upon your being punctual in the Payment, very honest, and very industrious, which is the surest Way to thrive. The Dean, although he often passed by the Shop, which was in New-Street, near the Dean's Liberty, seeing the Nailer still continue his Industry, did not call to him in three Years; then asked him, how his Wife and Children were? what Stock in Trade he had by him? and, whether he could pay him the Money he lent him? The Nailer immediately shewed him his Wife and Children, who were very clean and decently dressed; told him how much his Trade and Stock were increased; that he had the Money ready to pay him, for which, he, his Wife and Children, were most thankful, as in Duty bound, for their extream Happiness from so generous and good a Benefactor; and that after paying the Dean, he had thirteen Guineas, and odd Money, and was out of Debt. This Debt the Dean refused, and made the Nailer a Present of five Guineas more,
for

for his great Industry and OEconomy. This, it is reported, was the first Cause of the Dean's lending small Sums to poor industrious Tradesmen.

No Man was ever more liberal to his Friends, or to worthy People in Distress. When he came to the Deanry of St. *Patrick's*, it was then worth 700*l.* a Year, and he had two other Livings in Commendam with that, which made his Income near 1000*l.* per Annum, which he endeavoured to divide into three Parts, for the following Purposes; first, to live upon one Third of it. Secondly, to give another Third in Pensions and Charities, according to the Manner in which the People who received them, had lived; and the other Third, he laid by to build St. *Patrick's* Hospital, for the Reception of Idiots and Lunaticks: But, he did not strictly adhere to these Rules; for, being a most regular and temperate Man, and keeping no more than three Saddle Horses, two Servants in Livery, a Housekeeper, and Maid, who were all at Board Wages, he did not spend one Quarter of his Income upon Himself, Servants, and Horses; and therefore he must have given more than Half his Income in Pensions and charitable Uses during his Life; which is confirmed by the Fortune he left behind him, which did not amount to 11,000*l.* although he laid by Money every Year, which at common Interest, and according to the above-mentioned Scheme of OEconomy, would have amounted to more than double that Sum; and what is remarkable in this generous Man, that when he lent Money, upon Bond or Mortgage, he would not take the legal Interest, but one *per Cent.* below it.

He could not be charged with Prodigality or Extravagance, but in one Instance; and that was in having a compleat Service of Silver Plate, which might

might have cost 1000 Pounds, made him often say, *I am the poorest Man in Ireland, that bath a Service of Plate ; and the richest dignified Gentleman who doth not keep a Coach or a Chariot.*

IN the Year 1715, when *James Butler*, Duke of *Ormond*, who went from *England* to *France*, to avoid the Persecution of Party, was afterwards degraded from all his Honours and Titles, to the Degree of a Yeoman ; his Pictures and Coat of Arms were taken down and cut in Pieces, in the most ignominious Manner, in all public Places where he had Titles or Employments, and particularly in the Universities of *Oxford* and *Dublin*, of which Places he was Chancellor ; and when Mr. *Harwkins*, Ulster King of Arms, in *Ireland*, came to the Cathedral Church of *St. Patrick's, Dublin*, attended by proper Officers, to take down the Arms of the *Ormond* Family, which were then in that Church, and where they continue, the Dean would not permit him to touch them, or suffer so great an Indignity to be offered to that Family, or to Himself, or his Chapter ; which was the only Instance of Opposition in the King's Dominions ; in which he acted with unparalleled Friendship to that great, but unhappy Nobleman, as well as in preserving the Rights and Dignity of Himself, and the Independency of his Chapter.

Dr. *Swift* always lived in the strictest Friendship with People of Genius and Learning, and seldom broke with them on Account of Party Principles. I have seen the most friendly and affectionate Letters between him and Mr. *Addison*, and shall give you the following :

To

To the Reverend Dr. *Swift*.

Dublin, June 3, 1710.

DEAR SIR,

I AM just now come from *Finglass*, where I have been drinking your Health and talking of you with one who loves and admires you better than any Man in the World, except your humble Servant. We both agree in a Request, that you will set out for *Dublin* as soon as possible. To tell you truly, I find the Place disagreeable, and cannot imagine, why it should appear so now, more than it did last Year. You know, I look upon every Thing that is like a Compliment as a Breach of Friendship; and therefore, shall only tell you, that I long to see you, without assuring you, that I love your Company and value your Conversation more than any Man's, or that I am, with the most inviolable Sincerity and Esteem,

Dear Sir,

Your most faithful,

Most humble, and

Most obedient Servant,

J. ADDISON.

MR.

MR. *Addison*, was one of the Few, who were sincere in their Friendship to Dr. *Swift* of which he gave a noble Instance. Early in the Reign of King *George I.* His Majesty appointed the Earl of *Sunderland*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and recommended Mr. *Addison* to him for his Secretary; for which, Mr. *Addison* was very thankful. But, then said my Lord, there are some People in *Ireland*, who are not agreeable to me, with whom, I hope, you will not converse, when you go thither. Mr. *Addison* answered, he was much obliged to his Majesty for the Honour intended him; but, that he could not comply with his Excellency's Request; as he would not sacrifice his Friendship for Dr. *Swift* to be made Chief Governor of that Kingdom.



ON the 5th of November 1709, Dr. *Sacheverel* preached a Sermon suited to the Day, at St. Paul's Cathedral, London, before the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, which Sermon was printed and censured by the House of Commons for a malicious, scandalous and seditious Libel, highly reflecting on her Majesty Queen Anne, her Government, the late happy Revolution, and the Protestant Succession. On December 15, Dr. *Sacheverel* was impeached for high Crimes and Misdemeanors, taken into Custody of the Serjeant at Arms, and impeached at the Bar of the House of Lords, in the Name of the Commons of Great-Britain, for high Crimes and Misdemeanors, and delivered into Custody of the Deputy Gentleman Usher of the Black Rod; was tryed before the Lords, and found guilty on the 20th of March following. The Doctor, by Order of the Lords Spritual and Temporal, was silenced for three Years from Preaching; and that Sermon and another, to be burned by the Hands of the common Hangman, before the Royal Exchange in London, which was accordingly executed. When this Affair was over, the Ministry took very little Notice of him, and treated him with great Indifference: But, upon the Rectory of St. Andrew's, Holborn, being vacant, the Doctor applied to them for that Living, but they had no Regard to his Sollicitation; upon which he wrote to Doctor *Swift*, with whom he had a very slender Acquaintance, to request his Interest with the Government for that Parish; and set forth, how much he had suffered for them and their Cause. Dr. *Swift* immediately carried this Letter to Lord *Bolingbroke*, then Secretary of State, who railed much at *Sacheverel*, calling him, a busy, intermeddling Fellow, a Prig and an Incendiary, who had set the Kingdom in

a Flame, which could not be extinguished, and therefore deserved Censure instead of a Reward. To which *Swift* replied, true, my Lord; but, let me tell you a short Story: "In a Sea Fight in the "Reign of *Charles II.* there was a very bloody "Engagement between the *English* and *Dutch* "Fleets, in the Heat of which, a *Scotch* Seaman "was very severely bit by a Loufe on his Neck, "which he caught, and stooping down to crack "it between his Nails, many of the Sailors near "him, had their Heads taken off by a Chain Shot "from the Enemy, which dashed their Blood and "Brains about him; on which, he had Compassion upon the poor Loufe, returned him to his "Place, and bid him live there at Discretion; "for, as he had saved his Life, he was bound in "Gratitude, to save his." The Recital of this, put my Lord *Bolingbroke* into a Fit of Laughter, who, when it was over, said, "The Loufe shall "have the Living for your Story." And, soon "after, *Sacheverel* was presented to it.

A YOUNG Clergyman, the Son of a Bishop in *Ireland*, having married without the Knowledge of his Friends, it gave Umbrage to his Family, who, on that Account were very angry, and his Father would not see him. Dr. *Swift* being in Company with him sometime after, said, "That "when he was a School Boy at *Kilkenny*, he longed "very much to have a Horse of his own to ride "on; that one Day he saw a poor Man leading a "very mangy, lean Horse out of the Town to "kill him for the Skin and the Shoes. *Swift* being much moved, asked the Man, if he would "sell him? The Bargain was very soon made, and "*Swift* gave him all the Money he had, which "was about eighteen Pence: The Purchaser immediately got on him, to the very great Envy

" of

“ of some of his School-Fellows, and to the Ridicule of others, and rode him about the Town ;
 “ but the Horse very soon tired, and lay down ;
 “ *Swift* who had no Stable for him, nor any Money to pay for his Grazing, Hay, or Oats, began to cry, and wept for the Money : But, the Horse died immediately, which gave the Owner great Relief.” To this the young Clergyman answered, “ Sir, your Story is very good, and applicable to me. I own I deserve it,” and then burst into a Flood of Tears. The Dean made no Reply, but went the next Day to the Lord Lieutenant, prevailed on him to give the young Gentleman a small Parish which was then vacant, to support him and his Wife, and soon after made a Reconciliation between the Father and the Son.

BEING in Company one Day with Dr. *Bolton*, Archbishop of *Cashel*, and Doctor *Edward Synge*, Bishop of *Elphin*, and other Trustees of the Linen Manufacture ; he asked them, why that Board did not elect him a Trustee, that he might have it in his Power to serve his Country ? The Archbishop answered, *That he was too sharp a Razor and would cut them all.* To which the Dean made no Reply.

HE could never prevail on Lord *Carteret* to make him a Trustee of the Linen Board, or, to recommend him to be a Justice of the Peace, although he was in the greatest Intimacy and Friendship with his Excellency, who said, I am sure Mr. Dean, you despise both those Feathers, and would not accept of them ; the Dean reply'd, No, my Lord, I do not, as I might be serviceable to the Public in both Capacities ; but, as I would not be governed by your Excellency, nor Jobb at that Board, or suffer Abuses to pass there, or at

Quarter Sessions or Assizes, I know, you will not indulge me for the Good of this unhappy Nation: But, if I were a worthless Member of Parliament, or a Bishop, would vote for the Court, and betray my Country, then you would readily grant my Request: To which his Excellency rejoined with great Freedom and Politeness; what you say is literally true, and therefore you must excuse me.

THE Dean took much Pains to be well informed in all Affairs relating to *Wood's Halfpence*, and the Constitutions and Laws of *England and Ireland*, relating to the Prerogative of the Crown, and the Liberties of the People; which made him take more Time in writing the Draper's Letters, than any other Parts of his Works; the shortest of which Letters, took up at least ten Days Time to finish and to write them according to Law, and to the Level and Understanding of the most illiterate of the common People.

HE was held in such Veneration and Honour by all the Members of his Chapter, that they unanimously voted him 20 Pounds a Year out of their OEconomy to keep the Deanry House in Repair; and, as a further Mark of their Esteem, they had his Picture painted at full Length, by Mr. *Bindon*, the most eminent Painter of *Ireland*, who had several Poems wrote to him in *Latin and English*, upon his fine Performance; which Picture, is the Property of all succeeding Deanes and Chapters, and placed in the large Parlour of the Deanry House, with a large fine carved *Irish Oak* Frame round it.

AT a Commencement in *Trinity College, Dublin*, sometime about the Year 1734, Dr. *Swift* came into the Regent House, where the Vice Chancellor, Doctors, and Masters, were sitting: On his Entrance,

trance, the Masters, nearest the Door, rose up, and so on in Succession, until he advanced towards the Head of the Room, where the Vice Chancellor, Doctor *Sterne*, Bishop of *Clogher*, and Doctor *Baldwin*, Provost, sat as Presidents; and notwithstanding all the Discouragements of the Vice Chancellor, and others, at that End of the Room, almost every one found themselves in a Disposition to rise up. The same happened to *Virgil* in the Senate of *Rome*.

ALDERMAN *Barber*, who was Lord Mayor of *London* in the Year 1733, and had printed several political Pieces for Dr. *Swift*, made a Present of the Dean's Picture to the University of *Oxford*, with the following Inscription:

JONATH. SWIFT, S. T. P.

Decan. S. Patr. Dubl.

Effigiem Viri Musis amicissimi,

Ingenio prorsus Sibi proprio celeberrimi;

Ut Ipsum suis Oxoniensibus aliquatenus redonaret,

Parietem habere voluit Bodleianum

1739

JOHANNES BARBER, Armiger, Aldermannus

Nec ita pridem Prætor Londinensis.

THE Rev. Mr. *Hart*, an eminent Poet, and Author of the Life of *Gustavus Adolphus*, hath informed some of his Friends, that he had read eleven Sermons of the Dean's, which he had lent to Mr. *Pope*, who assured Mr. *Hart*, they were the best he

ever had read, and Mr. *Hart* hath said the same, who was very circumstantial in telling they were not only stitched together, but in a black Leather Case; that they were among Mr. *Pope's* Papers, when he died; and that he believed, that Dr. *Warburton*, who had the Revival and Publication of all *Pope's* Writings, after his Death, might have seen them: If so, it is hoped that learned Gentleman will oblige the World with the Publication of so vast a Treasure.

Dr. *Swift* frequently cleaned his Library, to clear it of Rubbish, and often burned M. S. of his own, which did not please him. One Day in particular, he brought above thirty of his Sermons from the Study into his Bed Chamber, where he was going to throw them into the Fire; and being asked, what Papers they were? He answered, Old Sermons, which I shall never preach again; upon which Dr. *Sheridan* begged them, saying, they would be very useful to him, who might preach very often, on which the Dean gave them; three of these Sermons, to wit, on the Trinity, on the Testimony of Conscience, and, on mutual Subjection, were published after Dr. *Sheridan's* Death, by his eldest Son *Thomas*, who hath made a great Figure as an excellent Player, and also an Author, by his Treatise on *British* Education. What became of the others, we cannot tell: But, five other Discourses, with great Difficulty, have been procured, and added to the foregoing.

The Dean in his Tour through *Ireland*, visiting *Waterford*, enquired who were the Clergy resident there? Amongst them *Robinson* was his Acquaintance, and accepted the Dean's Invitation to shew him the City. Passing near the Remains of an old public Building, the Dean observed a carved Stone; it was at some small Distance, but the Way to it

so covered with the most nauseous Filth; that he prevailed on *Robinson* to carry him thither on his Back. When he had satisfied his Curiosity, by viewing the Arms of the City, with this Motto,

Urbs intacta manet.

he returned to his Inn, and wrote the following Stanza.

URBS INTACTA MANET ——— *semperque intacta
manebit :*

Tangere Crabrones quis bene sanus amat ?

Robinson enquired the Meaning of *Crabrones*; the Dean asked him if he had ever, until that Day, travelled through a Country of Hornets; but, said the Dean, for the Benefit of our Female Friends, I will translate the Epigram. After a very short Pause, he did it thus:

A Thistle is the *Scotish* Arms,
Which to the Toucher threatens Harms :
What are the Arms of *Waterford* ?
That no Man touches—but a T——d.

WHEN he travelled in the Country, he would often buy Halfpennies Worth of Tobacco, which is usually sold by Measure, when retailed, to give to poor *Irish* People, who are very fond of this disagreeable Weed. At one Place, where he thought the Measure too large, he bought thirty-two Halfpenny Worths, and desired the Person who sold it, to weigh them altogether, which was done, and the Tobacco came to three Shillings and Sixpence, on which, he blamed the Man for his Folly,

Folly, and made a Measure for him, by which he got a reasonable Profit, instead of being ruined.

He went to Church three Times on *Sundays*: In the Morning, to his own Cathedral; in the Afternoon to the *French Church*, (under the Roof with *St. Patrick's Cathedral*); and, in the Evening, to the Cathedral again, where Divine Service was performed in the most grand and solemn Manner, and much resorted to by Persons of the greatest Quality and Distinction.

FIREs have sometimes happened in *Dublin*, by which, People of all Denominations have been Sufferers; upon which melancholy Occasions, the Dean always exerted himself, not only in Person, by going from House to House, to make Collections for them; but, would write and recommend their melancholy Cases to the Public; would go to the afflicted Sufferers, offer them his Service, and would be the first to subscribe in a most princely and generous Manner to their Relief; which worthy Example of his, the benevolent Citizens of *Dublin* would imitate.

He once had a Design of leaving 300*l.* a Year for ever, to be lent out at Interest, in small Sums, not exceeding twenty Pounds, which every Year would increase three hundred Pounds, out of which, only thirty Pounds a Year, was to be paid to a Clerk: But, some great Men of the Law, advised him to the contrary, and said, that instead of being a public Good, it would become a Monopoly, great Men would endeavour to be Trustees, and instead of serving the Poor, would apply this Money to their own Uses, upon which, the Dean laid this Design aside.

His Acquaintance consisted of the best and greatest Men of *Ireland*, Archbishop *King*, Dr. *Hellam*, Dr. *Delany*, Dr. *Bolton*, &c. When these
Persons

Persons died, he sought for no Acquaintance but with those of midling Understanding and small Fortunes, which gave him an Opportunity of improving their Minds, and shewing his Liberality and Generosity to them, whose Chair and Coach-Hire he would pay in a most bountiful Manner, whenever they waited on him; and, it was a constant Practice with him, when he dined with Persons of inferior Fortune to himself, to carry a small Joynt of Meat, a Fowl, or Fish, with Bread, Wine, Salt, Pepper, and Vinegar, Table Cloth, and Napkins, which no one took amiss, but gave him his Way, as it was always thought an Honour to have his Company. This Custom he practised in the Country ten Miles about the City. He was always attended by two Servants when he went out of Town, each of whom, he made to carry a single Boot, to prevent any Pride, Jealousy or Strife between them.

It was sometimes a Custom with him, to allow a Saturnalia to his Servants, (according to the old Roman Custom) at which Time he would attend them with Gentlemen of his Acquaintance, and allow them a genteel Entertainment, with all the Freedom and Talk they could use.

He was very indulgent to young Authors, by giving them good Advice, correcting their Works, and telling them where they were mistaken.

SOMETIME before the Dean's Memory failed him, Dr. *Delany* went to visit him one Morning, and asked, Mr. Dean, how do you? He answered, "I am not the Dean, I am not what I was; pity me, and pray for me."

FOR many Years before he dyed, he was afraid of losing his Memory, which made him dread a long Life; this Misfortune, he was so very sensible of, that he drew the strongest Picture of it
imaginable

imaginable in the Character of the *Strulbrugs* in *Gulliver's Travels*.

ONE Time in a Journey from *Drogheda* to *Navan*, he rode before his Company, made a sudden Stop, dismounted his Horse, fell on his Knees, lift up his Hands and prayed in the most devout Manner. When his Friends came up, he desired, and insisted on their alighting, which they did, and asked him the Meaning? "Gentlemen," said he, "pray join your Hearts in fervent Prayers with mine, that I may never be like this Oak Tree, which is decayed and withered at the Top, whilst all the other Parts are sound."

ANOTHER Time, walking with *Dr. Young*, the celebrated Poet, and some others, about a Mile from *Dublin*, the Dean stopped short, the Company passed on, but not seeing him follow, *Dr. Young* went back, and found the Dean fixed as a Statue, earnestly gazing at a lofty Elm, which, in its uppermost Branches was much withered and decayed. Pointing to it, he said, "I shall be like that Tree, I shall dye at the Top."

SWIFT never was very outrageous, but his Memory failed him by Degrees, for many Years together; insomuch, that he forgot all his Friends, and Domestics, could not call any of them by their Names, nor for Cloaths, Food, or any Necessaries that he wanted; in short, his Forgetfulness grew so much upon him, he could not remember any one Passage of his Life, nor read, nor even tell his Letters, for near two Years before his Death. He likewise lost the Use of his Speech, excepting now and then uttering some incoherent rambling Words, being incapable of asking any Questions, or of returning Answers, nor could he ask even for one Necessary of Life. During this melancholly Situation, great Care was taken of his

his Person and Food, as he was incapable of dressing, undressing, or of helping himself to his Cloaths or Victuals; and so totally was he deprived of all rational Faculties, that he was treated like a new born Infant, being taken out of Bed, dressed, led about the Room by the Servants and Nurse-keepers, fed, undressed, and put into Bed like the youngest Child, and had the Actions of one, being fond of Gold or Silver Toys, which he would play with, or put into his Mouth.

THE Dean was of middle Stature, well made, and comely, with very good regular Features, an high Forehead, handsome Nose, large sparkling blue Eyes very piercing, (which had their Lustre to the last, although he read very much, but never made Use of Spectacles or Glasses;) an exceeding agreeable Mouth, a fine regular Set of Teeth, and round double Chin, with a small Dimple. His Complexion, a light Olive or pale Brown.

I am,

your Lordship's most Dutiful, &c.

A N

1000